



All the characters in this book have no existence outside the imagination of the author, and have no relation whatsoever to anyone bearing the same name and surname. They are not even distantly inspired by any individual known or unknown to the author, and all the incidents are pure invention.

Copy right @ T.T 2021

All rights reserved including the right of reproduction whole or in part of any form. The text of this publication or any part may not be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording, storage in an information retrieval system or otherwise, without the permission of the author. This work should be contributed free, therefore no amount of money should anyone charge for it.

Email: tabetethobsile@gmail.com

Cell number: 078 908 1364

Cover designed by yours truly Thee Author!

Visionary writings: T.T STORIES

Also an author of: **NOMASONTO - THE SOLDIER'S GIRL**

: UBIZO – THE CALLING

PROLOGUE

I sit down on the chair and watch my phenomenal work of art, I mentally pat my back proudly as he lay bounded on top of the single bed, butt naked with his small shrink dick, even a minor can do better than this shit I am starring at, his eyes are busy darting around as tears stream down like water fall with his trembling lips and mucus running down his nose mixed with tears, blood and saliva I felt so disgust and ready to throw up.

“Zinhle please”

He pleaded disgusting me even more. He was there the day they were killed, he was there to witness the outcomes of being a snitch, and he was there when they inflicted unnecessary pain on innocent souls. He watched them crying and begging, he initiated their brutal death and for that he will pay. I exhale and blink back the tears as I was on the verge of crying I hate these memories, I tap my foot on the ground and stare up the small window of our hell room; a room we use to torture and kill perpetrators. We call it Hell because hell goes down in this room. The door opened Ride one of the guys we work with walked in.

Ride: Ted, we going to get some drinks with the guys you tagging?

Me: No bra still gotta deal with this shit.

Ride: Sure see you bra. Don't be hard on the poor guy give him a slow painful death.

He said sarcastic then he winks and walked out. The guys don't really like me they don't treat me as equal because I am the only girl on their crew either way I don't give a shit, only Ride and Craig are always nice to me, they actually treat me like a human being female or not. I stood up from the chair and walked up to him, he kept blinking several times, fear written all over his face.

“Zinhle please, what happened to you, you use to be kind, we grew up together I am sorry. I am so sorry please forgive me”

I run my hands on his bare chest and watched him as he cry like a new born while begging me to forgive him, I run my hands up to his jaws which I grab tight infecting pain on him.

Me: Listen here Mzamo you are nothing to me, I am going to kill you. I will kill you because I blame you for everything, I blame you for the death of my brother, and for the death of Sonto's siblings had you not snitched things would've been different.

Mzamo and I grew up in a same village which was ruled by a ruthless man; he killed and did as he pleases. I have no family because of that King my father was burnt alive right in front of my eyes, my Mom who had stroke suffered a heart attack after hearing my Dad has passed on, my brother was beaten to death for just eating sugarcane then my other younger brother was shot dead after Mzamo sold my friend out. Long story short my friend's three siblings were brutally killed there including her brother's girlfriend and Mzamo think he will live to tell a tale, he should think again because this Zinhle is not going to let this shit go.

Mzamo: I am sorry Zinhle I am so sorry I shouldn't have snitched, please forgive me.

Him pleading just irritate me even more, in fact his voice alone irritate me. I gave him a back slap he cried more loudly while shouting for help. I gave him another slap across his eyes. He couldn't move nor hid his face since he was bounded on the bed facing the ceiling. Every sorry he says just build more anger inside me, hearing him apologising just makes me sicker. I have waited for this moment for so long, it been four years in training and they have only trusted me with dealing my personal issues recently. He kept on wailing loudly, I grab a Sjambok from the table making him wail even more while begging. I stood beside him and wink then gave him one whip across his stomach which instantly turned red, he screamed in agony and that just felt so good.

Me: Do you like that eh? You like it don't you?

I whip him again.

Mzamo: Zinhle please, please ...aaaahhelp! ...Help! Any-

I whipped him three times in a row, moving from his stomach to his thighs.

Mzamo: Aaa... awe! Awe Ma! Ngaze ngafa!

I smirk looking at him; I run my hand on his bruised stomach.

Me: It hurt doesn't?

My phone ringed on my jean pocket, I took it out and checked the caller ID then groaned and ignored it. I went back to giving him another two whips.

Mzamo: Zinhle! ...Zinhle! ...aaah ...Ahh

Me: Oh Mzamo I used to like you, we were all hustling for our families we all worked hard but yet you chose to betray us.

Mzamo: I am sor-

Before he could finish his sentence I whipped again.

Me: Don't fucking say you are sorry.

My phone ringed again.

Me: Nx fuck!

I said frustrated then walked out of the room and closed the door behind me, what I love more about NV security is that the special rooms are sound proofed. I picked the phone up when I was out of Mzamo's screams.

Me: Lumka

Lumka: Love I hope you are on your way; I am on my way to the restaurant.

Lumka is a guy I am fucking, he is a good very handsome man with a decent job that pays well and he fucked really good like our sex game is on another level which is what I like about him the sex only.

Me: Of course I am about to leave the flat now

Lumka: Okay love I can't wait to see you.

I rolled my eyes. For some reason this guy thinks we are dating, I am just going there to set the record straight we are not dating, we just fucking nothing more.

Me: Sure.

I drop the call and went back inside; he was still crying his lungs out.

Mzamo: Zi- Awe Ma! Ngiyaxolisa! Awe!

I whipped him over and over, every whip accompanied by an image of my father burning and his voice screaming in pain, images of my mother who died right in front of my eyes on the hands of my friend what anger me the most is the fact that Mzamo was there that night he knows exactly what the King did to my family yet he still snitched and got the only family member I was left with killed. I whipped him over and over all I could see is red, red, red nothing more. The voices on my head had block me from reality, all the pain I went through in the hands of that King were blocking me from reality. I whipped him with tears gushing out of my eyes. I wasn't even aware where I was whipping him all I know is I was whipping him and I didn't care what happens to him. My hand got tired and I got so frustrated, I gave it my all and whipped him one more time before turning and kicking the chair I was sitting on making it fly to the wall in frustration then I bend over with my hands on my knees and let out a loud angry groan. I kept breathing heavy with these stupid tears still gushing out, when I was finally calm I realised that Mzamo's screams has stopped. I slowly raised my head and his whole body was covered in bruises and blood even his face, his small dick and thighs just about everything still I didn't feel bad at all. He didn't die from the bruises I know that because I have been doing this long enough to know how long a person last when being whipped, he might have died from agony and shock and his stupid screams, pussy nigga can't even take a lousy whipping.

Me: Nx

I click my tongue and spit on his face then threw the sjambok back on top of the table and wiped the stupid tears off my face then walked out. I walked the whole way of the other rooms. NV Security it a security company that trains us to kill owed by my friend's husband and his brother it suited in the middle of nowhere with a big field where the training and everything take place there are cottages for those who are in training I used to live here but now I am no longer in training, now I am a fully trained assassin I kill for a living but I only deal with bad guys our boss Mabandla knows to always assign me to kill people who initiate pain on others especially defenceless women other than that I don't take the deal, I let the boys deal with it. The whole way is very long as there are many rooms and the Hell room is the last one at the far end. I passed by the clean-up guys playing cards.

Me: I am done with Hell you can clean up.

They gave me nasty looks, I have known them for full five years but still they don't like having a woman in their territory, too bad because I am not going anywhere. I walked to my car and drove straight to my place which is a three hour drive from NV when I got there I quickly took a shower and wore my red above the knee dress then drove to the restaurant to meet up with Lumka.

He was half way the bottle of wine, poor guy he has been waiting here for hours. I walked up to him his back is on me I gently tap his shoulder he turned not looking pleased at all.

Me: hey you still here.

Lumka: Jeez Ted I have been waiting for hours I was about to leave.

Me: Something came up, can I sit.

He exhales and stood up to open the chair for me, such a gentleman this one. I smile kindly.

Me: Thank you, yoo I am starving have you ordered?

He shakes his head no.

Lumka: Should I pour you some wine.

Me: No I need something strong it been a very rough evening, where is the damn waiter.

I raised my hand and waved for a waiter and ordered whisky while I wait I went through the menu.

Me: What are you having?

Lumka: Are you really not going to apologise Ted.

Me: What?

Lumka: You got here after hours, I waited and wait- you know what never mind I don't want this night to be ruined. I will eat what you are having.

I put on a fake smile.

Me: Good.

I put down the menu as the waiter placed my glass of whisky

Me: We will have grilled steak, salad and vegetables.

The waiter took our order then left.

Lumka: I am so glad you finally showed up, I was so heartbroken thinking you stood me up. Page | 7

He said smiling and staring right on my eyes as if searching for my soul he shouldn't I have no soul. I took a long sip from my whisk letting it burn my throat.

Lumka: I missed you the past week, I was even going crazy.

Red flag, red flag he is in love and I am not there perhaps if I was a normal woman I was going to be happy with a man like him; handsome, good sex, financial stable, caring and loving but not me.

Me: Umm Lumka look I ...

Lumka: Wait before you say anything.

He went on his three piece suit pocket and came out with a small box before I could even register what was happening he went down on his one knee and looked up at me with a ridiculous smile. Everyone turned to look at us.

Lumka: I know you and I have this weird relationship going on but I love you Teddy, I love you so much and I want to spend the rest of my life with you, I want to build a home with you, I want to wake up next to those beautiful eyes every day, I want to kiss those soft lips every day when I wake up, you set my heart on fire please be my wife.

Me: Eh Lumka gets up.

People with being nosey they were already recording us and making those "Ncaaaah so cute sound" I got really irritated there goes my grilled steak damn I was so hungry now I will have to fucking leave.

Lumka: Teddy Zungu would you please pretty please be my wife?

He asked again, I took a very long sip of my whisk letting it burn me.

"Say yes, yes!" The crown we have attracted said cheering up.

Me: No I can't marry you Lumka get up please.

"Aaah" The crown said disappointed I guess.

Lumka: Ted-

Me: No look I am sorry but I don't feel the same way, you are a good man you will find someone to love you. For me it was just about sex nothing more, I'm sorry.

I said and took my things then left and my heart was on my food fuck Lumka. As I leave the restaurant I could hear the whispers and disappointment coming from inside they should just chill I am not the first girl to turn down a guy even Duncan a whole celebrate was turned down once.

On my way home I had passed by McDonald and got me something to eat. I put the food on the plate then went to get a new sim card. I live in a flat with just one bedroom, bathroom and an open plan kitchen lounge; it's nice and cosy perfect for me. I settled on the couch with my food, my phone, a sim card and a cup of coffee. I ripped open the sim card and put it on my phone then dialled her number. I haven't talked to her in years now but I make sure to check up on her and how she is doing, sometimes I would even pass by her florist shop but making sure she doesn't see me.

Her: Hello

She said her voice still as sweet as ever.

Her: hello

She said again as I don't talk.

Her: "Princess I said get off that chair you will fall again!"

She shouts on the side, she has five kids' now four boys and one girl. Tell me about it baby making machine.

Her: Who is this?

I cleared my throat as I felt my heart havening.

Me: It me

Her: Zinhle!

The shock on her voice is audible.

Me: Yea

Her: Oh my God Zinhle, where have you been? I have been so worried about you.

Me: He proposed Sonto.

I said so gentle that I almost didn't recognised my own voice.

Her: What? Who proposed?

Me: I turned him down, he is a good guy but not for me.

Of course I am human I do feel bad for turning him down and I just need someone to vent too, having no friends leave me no choice but to call my old child hood friend who turned into a sister. Her husband made it clear that he doesn't want me anywhere near his family as the life I am living is dangerous.

Her: Why though? Don't you love him? "Langa! Langa! Take your sister to her room; she's messing with my flowers"

For some reason I was busy smiling to myself it so nice to catch a glimpse of her life even though I am not there.

Her: So sorry about that Princess is so naughty

Me: You sound like a really mother.

She chuckled.

Her: Yea hey motherhood have got into me but enough about me what going on with you, where are you?

Me: Nothing much, I just feel bad for turning down his proposal.

Her: Then why did you do it, Zinhle where are you? I miss you, come and see me please.

I sigh, it sad because I want to see her yet I can't the last thing I want is to put her life in danger.

Me: I love you Sonto, have a great night.

I said and dropped the call then took out the sim card chewed it and threw it away.

I exhale and lay back on the couch trying to calm and smooth my broken heart. I wish I could tell her about Mzamo I wish I can tell her Mzamo in no more that I took care of him that I hurt him the way he got our families hurt.

I am done with my past that chapter is closed for me I will never talk about it or think about it ever again.

That is a vow I made to myself as I lay on the couch.

One

ZINHLE ZUNGU- TEDDY

Page | 10

The cold air hit my face nicely, as sweat drip down my body my every muscles harden and air felt like it leaving my lungs as I run down the street towards the park with music busting on my ears through my headset that are connected on my iPod. It still an early morning few are driving to work and some are just going about their business while others are jogging like me. I run past the coffee shop all the way to my place I stretch my muscles for a whole twenty minutes then strip my clothes off and took a quick shower. After I was done I went to make breakfast nothing hectic just a cereal while listening to music, and stuffing myself with cereal. I checked my phone that I had left on the charger a missed call from the boss Mabandla that means only one thing, a mission need to be completed. I dialled his number and called him back.

Me: Boss

Mabandla: Check your emails you have a mission. His name is Blade a Nigerian bastard who does human trafficking; he is a drug lord and mafia King. He is not an easy target you will have to be extra careful when dealing with him, he is a lonely wolf no bouncers or guards he does shit all on his own but still he is dangerous. I sent you details on him and where he would be staying, keeps tabs on him before you strike.

Me: Yes Boss

Mabandla: Again be careful we don't want any shit coming back to us.

Me: I will be careful I promise.

Mabandla: Ted learn all his moves before you strike, be on his tails where he goes and who is he meeting with before you strike, don't mess up.

Me: Have I ever disappointed you?

Mabandla: No, go get them Teddy bear.

I nod my head as if he can see me.

Me: On it boss.

I dropped the call and took my PC to check out the email.

Blade a very handsome bastard from the looks, very powerful and wealthy, he will be staying in Hilton hotel for two weeks room number 205. I took my phone and call Craig our IT guy, the nerd.

Craig: A man can't get some sleep here, can he?

Me: No sleep for the wicked or sleep is for the wicked or wicked don't sleep, argh you what they say.

He chuckled.

Craig: Man you just woke me up from an amazing dream of me pumping on some fat black ass mama.

I rolled my eyes.

Me: Stop being a nasty racist nerd and get me the damn information I need.

He yawns loudly.

Craig: Blade right?

Me: Duuh yes send all the information on my phone.

Craig: Let wake up then.

I rolled my eyes and dropped the phone.

Craig is really good at what he does, his work is basically to tell us what we need to know about our opponent then we take it from there.

I wore my leggings with an oversized t shirt and denim jacket then my black boot where I put my knife and took my camera bag, put in my camera and gun with one of my fake ID, I locked the flat and drove straight to Helton hotel, my phone beeped on the way there. It Craig informing me about Blade's day he will be in a hotel, meet up with a client nothing much. I parked there and rushed inside to the receptionist lady.

Me: Hi

I smile politely at her.

Her: Hello welcome to Helton hotel, what can we do for you today?

Me: My name is Teddy I am a photographer student we got an assignment to capture whatever buildings around Durban I was wondering if I could talk with the manager it won't take long I just want his permission.

Her: He is a busy man; let me see if he can squeeze you in.

Me: Thank you

I took a revealed sigh some people are difficult to deal with thank God she wasn't bitch I do not have patience at all. After the call with the manager she turned to me.

Her: You got five minutes make it count love.

She said sweetly. I smiled and thank her.

Her: Hey please escort her to Mr C's office.

She waved for some guy who nods his hand and indicated for me to follow him to the office, I kept looking around this hotel is beautiful indeed and very clean. He knocked on the door and the man inside instructed him to come in, he peek his head.

"Sir I have a lady who is here to see you"

He then turned to me and opened the door wide.

“You can come in”

Me: Thank you

The door closed behind me, I confidently walked towards the table where an old man was sitting.

Me: Good Morning Sir my name is Teddy, Teddy Zungu.

He looked at me up and down then flashed a smile.

Him: Take a seat Teddy

Me: Thank you and thank you so much for agreeing to see me.

Him: Anything for a pretty lady like you.

Ok he is one of those old man who like young girls, good it will work on my favour. I smile sweetly at him.

Me: I am a student at DUT studying photography we were given an assignment to capture buildings I would really love to showcase the exquisiteness of your hotel.

He seat back and looked at me with a nasty smile that made me so disgust.

Him: Ok, what do I get in return?

Me: If my portrays are good you will get to be on one of the top magazines here in Durban

He chuckled.

Him: I already got my hotel on magazines.

Me: Oh well then we can arrange something.

I said sweetly with a shy smile. He raised his eye brow at me and smirk then extended his hand for a hand shake.

Him: We have a deal then.

I extended mine and we shake hands then he bends over and kissed my hand.

Gross!

I kept going around taking pictures that I won't even use, I took the elevator up to floor fifteen where Blade's room was associated, the moment the elevator open on his floor we bumped into each other as I was looking at the pictures on the camera not minding where I am going. My camera fall on the ground, his body so hard that it almost knocks me off, he didn't apologise he just walked in the elevator not even bothering with checking if I am okay or if my camera didn't break.

Me: Nx next time watch where you fucking going.

I said as I picked up my camera.

The elevator doors were about to close but he held them.

Him: Excuse me

He said giving me intense look thinking I will back down.

Me: I said next time fucking watch where you going.

I held my camera up.

Me: You broke my camera.

I said then walked away not even turning to look back, I heard the elevator doors close again. I walked the whole way towards his room, this is my chance to find whatever I can find on this guy before I strike, I tried opening the door but it was obviously locked.

Me: Fuck

I said hitting it with my hand in frustration.

“Are you okay”

A lady in a cleaning uniform asked, I cleared my throat and blinked sweetly at her.

Me: My boyfriend locked me out, we had an argument then he locked me out.

“Oh I am so sorry about that, give him time he will come around”

Me: I want to talk to him, he misunderstood me. I just want to apologise.

“Sorry nanas go get some fresh air outside and come back a little later when he is calm”

Damn my plan isn't working I thought she will offer to open the door for me, time for plan B. I nod my head.

Me: Thank you

She smile sweetly and walked away, she's so sweet too bad I am about to do this to her. I took out my gun and hit her with the back on the back of her head, and quickly catch her fast before she fell on the ground. I pocket her and came out with a set of keys. I search for 205.

Bingo got it! I dragged her towards the door and opened the door, then dragged her inside all the way to the bathroom where I took off her clothes and wore them leaving her my leggings and t shirt with the jacket. She is unconscious for now but she will wake up with just a headache.

I quickly walked back to the room where I rushed to the closet which had only few suits, I searched it turning everything up and down but still nothing I could use. I moved to a dressing table, I need to nowhere he keeps the girls so I would save them before killing him. Still I got nothing I moved to the lounge but before I could check the door handle moved and the door opened he walked in with some other guy, I breathe in and out to avoid panicking then worked on arranging the flowers vases. They walked in and looked at me; I dint turn to look at them I just kept on busying myself with pretending to clean. The both sit on the couch.

Blade: Make sure you get them past the boarder exactly at a given time; if you get late and fuck up just know I will personal slaughter your throat.

He said with his deep voice.

“I won’t the truck will be leaving here around four I will drive as fast as I could”

Blade: Do not extend 20, I will organise another transport for the others.

“Okay”

Blade: Let me give you a key to the warehouse.

He stood up and walked to the bedroom, I quickly turned and looked at the guy whose attention was on the phone, I will have to get out of here and follow him. Blade was quick to come back. He handed the guy a set of keys.

Blade: I will be there later on.

“Sure”

The guy said and walked out. I wiped a nowhere dust while making my way towards the door making sure not to even look his way.

Blade: Lady gets me a glass of water.

Fuck!

I cursed under my tongue then walked towards the small table; he had his back on me starring outside the window with his hands on his pocket. Maybe this could be my chance to kill him; I could stab him on his neck he won’t survive. And I will catch him by surprise he will definitely fall then I will get on top of him and stab him several times. I slowly peeped if he was looking at me, he is still looking out the window with his back on me, and I slowly take my hand down my boot and grab the knife. I tip toe towards him and jump for his neck but he was quick to block me the knife stab his shoulder instead and I went flying falling on the floor with my butt within the blink of an eye he was picking me up roughly. I kicked his stomach with my feet making him tighten his grip on my arms. I didn’t stop though I kicked him hard and he let me fall on the floor.

Blade: Bitch!

I am quick that just me the moment I hit the floor I got up fast and punch his hard stomach, he slap me sending me flying on the floor. Damn this guy can slap, I got up and put on my fists.

Blade: Who are you?

Me: Your worst nightmare.

Blade: You watch too much movies.

I went for his feet if I can get this giant him to fall beating him would be easy, he picked me up again and I threw punches on him, he threw me on top of the small table and I hit my back so hard breaking whisky bottles in the process.

Me: Aaah ...Fuck!

I screamed in agony, with the corner of my eyes I saw him coming towards me, I grabbed the bottle of whisky next to me, he bend over to pick me up I hit his

forehead with the bottle and stood up as he held his forehead with his hands. I threw one kick on his stomach still he didn't fall when I was about to throw another kick he grab my leg and pushed me this time I didn't fall I balanced myself he wasn't expecting that as he groaned bending over, I charged towards him and hit the knife on his wounded shoulder that still had my knife inside it. He groaned in agony and just like that I provoked an animal. He charged to me and grabs me by my throat; I kicked him on the stomach he gave me a back slap then another slap followed making me feel like the room is spinning. I managed to bend my head over and bite his hand on my neck. He let go of me and I fell he charged to me again and started kicking me showing no mercy, he kicked my stomach making me groan in pain. He roughly picked me up and slaps me I fall again on the floor, blood was all over me, I kept splitting it as I try to stand up again.

Blade: I am going to fucking kill you. You think you can take me on you fucking bitch!

He kicked me and kicked me then slap me so hard, he bend over and put his knees on my chest, I strangled with breathing.

Blade: Who sent you?

I breathe heavy trying to normalize my breathing then smirk at him and spit my saliva mixed with blood on his face.

Me: Fuck you.

I said still strangling to breathe. The pain he was infecting on me with his knee was too much. he gave me one hella slap across my face then stood up grabbing me with my neck he sent me across the wall, all I remember is flying hitting the wall so hard then it was light out for me.

TWO

ZINHLE ZUNGU- TEDDY
18SNL

My whole body hurt like shit as I try to move, my head pounding so hard and so damn painful. I tried to move my hand and touch my pounding head but I couldn't as I was tied. I groaned and slowly opened my eyes, I felt so dizzy when I tried to adjust my vision that was so blur. I licked my dry lips with my

tongue; it hurt so damn badly it like I have busted my lips, my mouth and throat were so dry I was thirsty like hell.

Me: Aaah

I screamed trying to free my bounded hands. I closed my eyes firm and opened them again. A human figure in front of me is what greeted me first, I shut closed my eyes again and then open them. There he was just sitting there staring at me. I am sitting on the chair, tied with a hard rope from my off shoulder down to my legs I couldn't even move, I want to touch my head so badly, in fact I want to touch my burning face, my cracked lips actually every part of me.

“You awake amoureuse?”

He said staring at me with a knife on his hand, my knife. My head overworked as memories of what went down flood my mind making my head pound even more. He is shirtless with a bandage on his shoulder; his muscular well-built body is covered in tattoos. He kept playing with my knife.

Me: I am a bit uncomfortable, do you mind untying me?

I said as I talk my throat throb so bad.

He chuckled bitterly.

Blade: Let have a chat amour

I rolled my eyes.

Me: My name is Ted stop calling me with your shit foreigner names.

Blade: Sassy ain't you amoureuse?

Me: Ted, Ted is my name.

He looked at me deep in the eyes, his eyes so penetrating that they sent cold shivers down my spine I didn't back down I stare back at him. Deep down I felt my inside sink, I wondered how long I have been here, is it long enough for Craig to find me. I have a tracker on my neck at the back then on top of that tracker is a butterfly tattoo you can't even see the scar where there is a tracker.

Me: Fuck this shit, just fucking unties me I am thirsty.

Blade: You thirsty

He said with a straight face then stood up and walked towards the door, I finally got a chance to look around. It a small room, a little bit dark with just my chair and his chair in front of me then by the door is a small table with a jug of water and a glass. He grabs the jug and walked back to me.

Blade: Who sent you?

I rolled my eyes; I wonder what makes him think I will tell him.

He stood in front of me and poured the water from my head it drip all the way down my body making me shiver and I felt like my head is pounding even more, my bruises on my face hurt so bad as they come in contact with water which is ice cold, I shivered and my breaths escalate.

Me: Son of a bitch!

I cursed at him with my eyes closed as water drip all over my face; a hot slap is what made me shoot my eyes open as fast as I could.

Blade: You are at my mercy you better not insult me, now fucking answer my question.

I laughed mockingly.

Me: Beat me all you like I won't tell you shit!

Blade: Let try this again

He grabs me by my jaws, his grip tight and painful.

Blade: Miss tough lady who sent you.

I couldn't talk since his grip was on my jaws, his eyes looking deep on mine. It such a shame he has beautiful brown eyes; he should've had animal red eyes they would've suit him. He let go of me.

Him: Now will you answer

I gathered all saliva I could get from my mouth and spit on his face. He back away a little, wiped off the saliva from his face and huff then gave me a murderous look.

Me: Take that you sick punk.

Before he could do anything there was a knock on the door saving my ass, he gave me an intense look before walking towards the door.

"Sir she doesn't exist"

A guy's voice said from outside.

Blade: What do you mean she doesn't exist?

"She just doesn't exist, she only started existing five years ago and there is nothing on her; no hospital where she was born, no date of birth, not parents or siblings it like she is like an alien. She started existing five years ago and my bet is this is not her really name, I checked her ID though it not fake or it doesn't look fake. And sir I tried to heck the numbers I got from her phone but it a dead end, whoever is working with her must be real good. I will have to ask the dark web for help and it might take time."

Blade: Do what you got to do.

He slammed the door then turned to me.

Blade: Who are you?

I rolled my eyes and smirk.

Me: You will never find anything on me asshole

He charged towards me but stopped midway as someone knocked on the door again, he looked at me and I wink at him. He blew his nose in frustration then turned to open the door.

Blade: What now

“Sir there is this guy he is like our God in the dark web, he can do anything, heck all our computers, crash them, like he is so powerful I have never met him in person he goes by the name of The Other Guy damn God knows I would love to meet that guy ...

Blade: Get to a fucking point.

“He sent this picture of your nephew, with a message that says; if you work for Blade he has Ted tell him I said I got his nephew let make a trade”

Blade: What?

For the first time he raised his voice, since I came across him he has never raised his voice. He is just too calm and in control of everything. He walked out and closed the door behind him, I sigh in relief thank God Craig came through for me. He shortly came back and stood by the door and just looked at me.

Blade: I will break you, slowly and slowly I will break and you would wish you never, never crossed path with me.

I blink several times and swallowed hard, I have no doubt he means every word and that just sent cold shivers down my spine making my skin crawl. He walked to me and untied the rope.

Me: Thank God I can move now, I must give The other guy one hella massage he saved my ass.

He didn't say anything, he just put his knees on my lap after he had untied me then held both my hands and tied them again I tried to push him but he was just too strong for me. When he was done he grabs me by my hair which hurt like shit, he lifted me up in a bridal style and carried me out of the room with me busy cursing and swearing and his hands on my bare ass squeezing them; I was still wearing the cleaning uniform from the hotel which was not that long. We walked on a dark corridor passing by closed room's doors. He suddenly stopped opened the door and walked in. He closed and locks the door behind him. I was fuming in anger as I lie on his bare shoulder and all I wanted was to complete my mission of killing him. If I could I would hit his injured shoulder so hard. He threw me on top of the bed and I hit my head hard on the matrass.

Me: Fuck!

He got on top of the bed and took a knife out of his pocket then cut the rope on my hands, finally I got a chance to touch my pounding head.

Me: You sick punk

He roughly pushed me over making me lie there then he got on top of me.

Me: What are you doing?

I asked in a raised voice as I panicked. I pushed him with all strength I got but he just pinned both my hands down, I moved my lower body and kicked. I managed to hit him with my knee he let go of my one hand, I slap him and put my fingers on his eye he yank them off and pinned my hand down again. He didn't hit me back he just pressed his strong body on me and took both my hands and pinned them on top of me with his one hand, he is strong, so strong that I couldn't even move.

Blade: You think nothing can break you? Then watch me break you beyond repair.

He whispers on my ear so gentle as if it something sweet, it did send the wrong signal to my cookie as it start itching in a weird sexual way which I hated with my all. He bite my earlobe gentle moving to my lips while licking me I didn't stop fighting him off me. He tried to kiss me but I bite his lip in such a way that I tasted blood.

Blade: Amour!

He grabs my neck tight with his other hand choking me, I struggled with breathing as he let go of my hands and moved his hand to unbutton his pants. I tried by all means to get his other hand off my neck but he just pressed harder, I couldn't fight him he was out of my league. I closed my eyes as I felt my breath shortening. He let go of my neck and I quickly put my hands there while coughing and trying to catch my breath. He moved my panties aside so fast before I could even act his cock was on my entrance ready to pump in with his knee between my thighs. I let go of my neck and pushed his chest still he didn't move, I kept hitting him while fighting with my whole body but that seems to give him more strength as he put his knee between my thighs forcing them even more apart. Things were hot, so steamy that I vowed in my mind that he will sweat real sweat before he can have me. His strong arms grip my waist; I slap him so hard across his face.

Blade: Yes Amour hit me, hit me amour.

Me: You fucking sick punk!

I screamed hitting him harder. In a blink of an eye he pushed his cock inside me penetrating me deep to my womb, I was wet this whole him and me fighting thing aroused me for some weird reasons and I hated that I hated feeling aroused by someone who is forcing themselves on me. He started thrusting in and out fast and rough; I sank my nails on his chest as I moan in pressure

mixed with pain. He ripped open the uniform and I was left in my red bra he moved his hands all over my body squeezing rough. I have no doubt I will be left with bruises. I wrapped my legs around him as he pump on me even more hard, I kissed bite his strong arms while my hands moved all over his strong massive body. i felt my body vibrating within ten minutes in the fucking, I came so hard in a way I never came, my nails dig on his strong body as my legs curled, damn it felt so good I felt like I was hitting cloud 100. He didn't stop he fucked me through my release; he kept on fucking me as I felt my legs shake. He rips my panties and changed positions by spreading my legs, he held them wide and pushed his cock deep inside me, I was tired and thoroughly fucked but still he kept fucking me harder, my screams echoed through the room. Again I came for a fucking second time and he hasn't cum not even once. My legs felt jelly as he continue with fucking me hard, finally he shot his cum through me while he groaned and by that time I was dog tired, I couldn't even barely open my eyes Yet cum drip down me again.

Blade: I will break you and let you put a bullet through your skull because amour by the time I am done with you death will be the only way. His hot breath hit my ear as he whisper to me while he held me so tight releasing himself, I curl up the bed and closed my eyes as he got off me.

THREE

ZINHLE ZUNGU- TEDDY

I was woken up by a hard spank on my ass, I jump up ready to fight only to realise it Blade. I am naked and Blade is standing over the bed, I quickly tried to reach for a blanket to cover myself. He threw a dress to me, I was stinking and I felt so disgust by myself. What disgust me the most is the fact that my rapist made me cum, that he forced himself on me and my stupid body responded by making me wet and ready.

Blade: Wear that

Me: I gotta bath first.

I said with as much attitude as I could gather, I didn't want him to see how disgust and vulnerable I am, I didn't want him to see the hurt side of me.

Blade: No

Me: No what?

Blade: You won't bath, put that fucking dress on.

Me: You can't tell me shit.

Blade: Put the dress on, I got to deliver your stinking ass.

I groaned in frustration at least I am going home; I will spend as much time as I could on the shower. I put the dress on, it black and so damn short with no panties on I felt like a prostitute. He threw my boot on me which I put on.

Blade: Move

I gave him a dead stare before moving to the door, after he had walked out and closed the door he led the way towards the elevator, at this moment I wished I had a gun to shoot his disgusting ass to death. He pressed the button and the elevator doors opened we got in and it took us up. The moment the doors opened we were greeted by naked girls walking around in their panties and some in nothing at all, we in a strip club but there are no customers' just strippers and few ladies who were doing cleaning, and everything in this club is decorated in red and black with large, small and medium cages where girls dance. I don't judge prostitute or strippers as long as they chose that life themselves and not forced, some would walk past us and smile sweetly. I wasn't comfortable at all, but I managed to hide that pretty well as I held my head high, chest out and walked with no care in the world, ignoring the fact that my buttocks were showing on this ridiculous dress. We walked in passing different sections from bar tender who was mixing drinks and I craved for one, I could use some alcohol on my system to give me a boost on my bravery.

When we walked to the floor some guy in a red gown with boxers, sleepers and a glass of whisky on his hand walked up to us. He is slim and tall with a lager weird tattoo on his stomach

“Woah, brother I didn’t know you scored”
He gave me a once over look from head to toe as he stood in front of me blocking my way he then licked his lips.

Me: Get the fuck off my way

“Woah the fierce type, definitely my type mind if I fuck you baby”

I huff frustrated, I kicked him on his cock and he bend over letting the glass fall.

Me: Fuck that you fucking asshole.

He groaned and cursed at me as he bends over holding his cock.

“You fucking hoe, stupid asshole bitch”

I walked past him and followed after Blade who was standing by the entrance.

“What you looking at, get me some fucking ice!”

He shouts to whoever he was shouting. Blade moved again and I followed after him all the way to his car which was parked across the street, the moment I step out the cold breeze hit my face making me sigh in relief finally I am not suffocated. What shocked me the most is learning that it morning meaning I have been kept hostage for a day and night with no food or water. Yes I am hungry now that I think of it but what I want more was to wash off this disgusting smell off me. We both got in the car and he drove off, no one was saying anything to anyone the only thing on my mind is ways I could kill him, I would love to watch him take his last breath, only if I could get to stab him on his heart and twist the knife torturing him and watch in satisfaction as blood gush out. Or maybe I could push him and make him mess with the starring but that too risk for me too. He kept giving me weird looks as he drove I pull up my straight face. I didn’t know exactly where we were but I knew we are in Durban. He drove for some time till we reached Durban CBD, he drove to Mngeni road where he parked, took out his phone and made a call.

Blade: We here.

The person on the other side talked.

Blade: How the fuck will I get my nephew.

Again he posed as the person on the other side talk.

Blade: Fine

He then dropped the call and turn to me.

Blade: Get the fuck out

He unlock the doors, I got out and held the door open.

Me: I am going to kill, even if it the last thing I do. I will cut your dick off and feed it to you piece by piece.

He just stares at me showing no emotions, his expression so hard and penetrating, I slammed the door hard and walked away.

Blade: You have cum dripping down your legs.

He shouts after me as I walk away. I raised my middle finger on him and walked with pride.

Knowing the crew I work with they won't come and get me, I would have to make another plan to get myself to my place. I can get a taxi but with no money that far from possible. I had no choice but to go at Lumka's work place. As I walked down the street people kept staring at me but I didn't give them the satisfaction that their stares bothers me, I walked with pride even though I looked like a prostitute. The moment I turned to Smith Street taxi drivers started hooting and calling me babe, some would call me slut, I felt really harassed. I walked towards his work place; Lumka is a financial adviser works at Ned bank. The security gave me lustful look as I walk past him pulling open the door. I walked to the front desk where a coloured lady was sitting.

Me: I am here to see Lumka

She looked up from her computer.

Her: Lumka?

I rolled my eyes, gosh I don't have all day.

Me: Yes the financial adviser

Her: Is he expecting you?

Me: Can you just call him and tell him Ted is here.

Her: Oh so you are Ted, you rejected his proposal for being a prostitute.

I lean over.

Me: I am not in the mood for bullshit get Lumka here before I lose my cool and next time learn to fucking mind your business.

She blinked few times and took the phone, she made the call.

Her: Mr L Ted is here to see you ...yes she is here ...okay ...cool.

She dropped the phone and turned to me.

Her: You can come

She walked around, waking towards the door where she pressed her finger print and instructed me to go up.

Her: He will open for you

I walked up the stairs to another closed door with a small window, Lumka walked towards the door he looked at me through the small window; I gave him a small smile and pleading eyes. He opened the door and I walked in his office, the disgust look that he gave me bothered me a lot.

Lumka: Teddy what are you wearing?

Me: I need your help Lumka.

Lumka: What going on?

Me: I need money to get to my place.

Lumka: What?

I never asked Lumka for anything, he knows I can afford every damn thing I want.

Me: Just call an uber, I will pay you back.

He neared me.

Lumka: Ted are you okay? What wrong?

He asked with concern written all over his face.

Me: Just call the damn uber Lumka.

Lumka: Ted please talk to me, what happened?

Me: I am okay, just call the uber for me.

I said then walked towards the small couch where I sit down as I felt mentally and physical drained. Lumka called an uber for me.

Lumka: Should I get you something to eat?

Me: No thanks.

He exhale and went to sit on his chair opposite me, he just looked at me without saying anything his judgemental eyes all over my body.

I huff.

Me: Okay fine, say it.

Lumka: Say what?

Me: You clearly got something to say so why don't you fucking go ahead and say it, am I disgusting you?

He just looked at me.

Me: Come on stop being a pussy and say it on my face.

His phone beeped.

Lumka: Your ride is here Ted; call me when you get home.

I sigh and stood up; he also stood up and opened the door for me. I walked out and turned to him.

Me: Lumka

Lumka: Teddy

Me: Thank you

He nods his head.

Lumka: Anytime, don't forget to call me

I nod and walked away, the coloured lady opened for me. The moment I walked out I took a very deep breath and walked towards the uber.

When I got to my place there was a package on top of the counter, a new phone obviously Craig or Ride got into my apartment and left it there so I would be able to contact the boss. I threw the box on the couch and walked to

the bathroom where I looked at my reflection on the mirror, I looked like hell no wonder people were giving me weird looks, and the dress was so short and tight, my face was bruised with red spot including a red eye, a busted lip and messed up hair; damn I looked like hell. I slowly took off the dress revealing my body with bruises and my back hurt so badly. Son of a bitch did a real number on me. I huff in frustration and went to take a bath. I scratched myself hard with a face wash, washing off his dirty on me. I scrub and scrub till it hurt and bruised even more after I was done I got dressed and ordered pizza using the new phone within hours my pizza arrived. I need strength before dealing with Mabandla because I know damn well he will eat my ear off, I finished eating and took the phone to call him.

Mabandla: You damn took your sweet time

Me: I was bathing

Mabandla: What happened? Didn't I tell you to observe before striking?

Between you and me I am so sexually attracted to Mabandla, everything about him just screams perfection. Argh let me get my mind off that shit I just got raped for God sake.

Me: I was restless I am sorry.

Mabandla: Sorry won't fix any shit; you do know Blade won't rest until he knows who you work for.

I exhale.

Mabandla: You not allowed anywhere near NV, no meeting up with the guys; Blade will be tailing you and we need to be careful.

Me: Okay but can you please let me complete this mission

Mabandla: You failed and you are off duty

Me: What? That ridiculous how can I be off duty?

Mabandla: You failed and I don't trust you with any mission, you don't think you don't strategies; you are a liability to us.

Me: Am I the first to fail to kill, most of the guys have failed you didn't say all the shit you are saying to me, you didn't take them off duty.

Mabandla: We talking about Blade here, a very powerful bastard that won't rest until he has you and everyone else six feet under.

Me: You not being fair, y'all are bunch of sexiest motherfuckers and it not fair.

Mabandla: Teddy bear you will watch your tongue when you talking to me, I will fuck you up.

I sigh and calm myself.

Me: It just that you don't get it, I try my all best to prove myself and all you and the guys do is telling me I am not good enough.

Mabandla: You the one who fucking don't get it, the person who hired us to kill Blade is his brother and right now he is mad as hell and he demand his money back. This is not how we do things, we always deliver and you screwed us over, tainting our image.

Me: Then let me finish what I started let me kill him.

Mabandla: Teddy bear I said you are off duty, I will let someone else who is more capable to handle Blade.

Me: Seriously you trusted me with Blade first and I can still do it, I can kill him.

Mabandla: And you proved me wrong, I shouldn't have trusted you.

Me: Come on please, I can do this let me redeem your trust.

Mabandla: No, take this as your break. Go on a trip, visit other places, go shopping or do whatever shit you want. YOU ARE OFF DUTTY!

I groaned and dropped the call, fucking sexiest assholes. I want Blade I want to kill him myself he forced himself on me and for that he will pay I don't care if he made me come or whatsoever he will pay.

My mission from now on will be making him pay whether Mabandla approve or not I don't care.

I didn't want to over think, I wanted to forget about what went down with Blade, and I just needed an escape from the physical and emotional pain I was still feeling. I took two sleeping pills and a throw then lay on the couch with TV playing till I doze off to lala land, a land of peace.

I bend over in a dog style with my ass all up he has a dog belt around my neck and he was holding it like a dog being taken for a walk; the rope was choking me so hard and he was busy pumping on me, hard and fast, his other hand will spank my ass hard every now and then, saliva was dripping out of my mouth while my eyes would roll back, he loosen the belt around my neck making me take in a deep breath while breathing hard and coughing as I try to catch my breath, his hand let go of the belt and he grip my hair pulling them hard, I screamed as I felt pain which was mixed with pressure of being fucked, he pump more hard giving me spanks on my ass they were painful yet so good, I cum all over his cock as he kept fucking me through my organs and damn it felt so good. He moved his hands to my body squeezing hard while moving to my boobs.

From far I could hear a faint voice calling my name then there will be a loud bang sound.

"Ted!" bang! Bang! "Ted" bang! "Teddy"

I jump up standing on my two feet.

“Teddy open up”

I groaned and sit back on the couch while rubbing my face.

Me: Fuck I was dreaming

The dream felt so real and I could feel moisture on my cookie, what a fucked up dream. Page | 27

“Come on Teddy”

It Lumka I took a deep sigh before walking towards the door and open for him.

Lumka: Hey are you okay? I have been knocking for a while now.

I yawn.

Me: I was sleeping, come in.

I opened the door wide for him.

Lumka: Thank you, you didn't call me I just came to make sure you are okay.

Me: I am fine.

Lumka: I know you are not fine, please talk to me Ted. I want to be here for you, I want to take care of you but I can't do that if you don't tell me what going on. Who hit you Ted?

Me: I said I am fine, there is nothing to tell. No one hit me, I am fine.

Lumka: You have bruises all over your face and you say no one hit you, come on Ted talk to me.

Me: I will go get your money

Lumka: When you need someone to talk too just know I will always be there for you. Something tells me you need help, you need love and you need to be taken care off but I can't do that with you pushing me away, when you finally admit that you need help please call me anytime.

He looked at me deep on my eyes before he walked towards the couch; he looked at an empty box of pizza then back to me as I remain standing by the door.

Lumka: Have you eaten any proper food?

I shake my head no.

Me: I just ate pizza, Lumka look ah that so nice of you wanting to take care of me and all but I can take care of myself.

Lumka: I know, but we all need someone at some point.

I exhale.

Me: I'll be back

I walked to the bathroom to pee and clean myself up then washed my hands and went to my room where I took Lumka's money the one he borrowed me earlier on for uber. When I returned I found him cleaning up the empty box of pizza.

Me: Hey you didn't have too; aah here is your money. Thank you for coming through for me earlier on.

Lumka: You can keep it, I am cooking for you.

Me: What?

Lumka: Ted you need proper food and I will cook for you then leave.

Me: Lumka I told you I can take ca-

Lumka: Look I know you can take care of yourself but just let me do this one thing, please.

I sigh.

Me: Okay

Lumka is just too nice. I don't need him to be nice to me.

FOUR

BLADE

Their screams and pleading echoed throughout the whole warehouse as I walk in, the guys are loading them in a truck that needs to leave in few minutes. I had to handle everything myself since there is someone out there who wants me dead and I won't rest until I know who, I won't trust until I know who. I hate screaming women, can't they stand their shit for once, what will screaming help them with? They can scream all they want but man like me will be deaf to their screams. You can't just scream and expect things to change if you want freedom fight for it and stop making stupid noise.

Page | 29

Me: Why are they fucking screaming?

"Boss i-

Me: Nx

I walked towards the truck where they were.

Me: How many are here?

"20"

Me: How many left

"10"

Me: Ummh good, I will handle them. I will be driving back to Joburg during the weekend when you get there Vince will handle everything.

The boys nod their heads.

"Sure boss"

The pleading and screams never stopped, I pop my head inside the truck.

Me: What the fuck you screaming for?

"Please! Please let us go"

They cried more, pleading.

Me: Come here

I called for a girl who was about 18 years, these girls asked for it. What were they doing in clubs? They should've been sleeping or studying instead of gallivanting around at night. She didn't come; she looked scared as she held her self-tight.

Me: I said come here

I say with my stern voice, she looked around at the other girls then stood up wiping her tears and came towards me.

Me: Come on get out.

She got off the truck slowly still holding herself tight.

Me: Do you want to go home?

She nods her head yes.

“Yes, yes please”

“Please we also want to go home, please sir”

The others cry inside. I took a dramatically sigh.

Me: You sure want to go home?

“Yes please”

She pleaded looking up at me with tears streaming down her face.

Me: Okay, I am going to take you home.

She exhales loudly while she cries even more thanking me. I took out my gun; cock the safety as she looked up at me with fear.

Me: Well you asked for it.

I pointed the gun on her head before she could even blink I shoot her head, her brain exploded messing with my fine suit. The girls screamed.

Me: Who else wanna go home?

They all went quiet. One of the guys handed me a clothing to wipe the blood off my suit.

Me: Good no one, if I hear just one little sound know I will blow someone else’s brains again.

They made those silent sniffs. I turned my attention back to the two guys working for me.

Me: Clean this shit up and replace the girl.

They nod their heads and started getting busy. I left them to their job and drove back to the club. I own two clubs here in Durban then four clubs in Johannesburg; I run the Joburg side while my cousin runs the Durban side. He answer to me because I am the boss, I run everything and he can’t do shit without informing me first. I drove to the underground parking and park my car, I am avoiding hotels ever since that little stunt with Miss little too good. I walked up to the elevator, the club is quite during the day and I actually prefer it during the day I hate these too much noise even though they make me good money. Shawn my cousin is sitting on one of the couch with two girls each side and a glass of whiskey, he drinks a lot and get drunk as fuck, he even sniff drugs and it only a matter of time before I strip him off my clubs.

Shawn: Bro you back, is the shipment ready?

Me: Yea

I said and walked away, I am not much of a talker I just get to the point and let actions do the talking. I walked to the elevator which took me to the rooms that are underground, they are special we keep them for new girls who still need training and discipline. I walked to the rooms that I was current using; my paintings were still there untouched, I do painting it sort of something I always liked since I was a boy. I must finish this painting so I will get it delivered to

Miss little too good, she walk around thinking nothing breaks her she thinks having no loved ones will make her unbreakable what she doesn't know is I have been in this game longer than she has, I know exactly how to deal with her kinds, they hate feeling and I made her feel she will hate that, she will hate the fact that she got all aroused and wet as hell by a rapist, she will hate me for making her feel things she never felt before, dealing with her type is much more easier. I examine the painting with my hands on my pocket it almost done just some few touch up. The knock on my door interrupted my concentration.

Me: Yes

The door open, the IT guy walked in.

Him: Sir I think you should see this, the guy who has been tailing Ted sent me some pictures of some guy I did my research he is just a financial adviser they were dating or still dating I am not sure but the guy has recently tried to propose but she turned him down.

Me: Of course she did, that girl is fucked up and twisted.

I walk up close to him and watched the video that went viral on the internet.

Me: Anything I should know about this guy?

Him: He is royalty, some prince from a village. He is not that powerful.

Me: Send me everything I need to know about him on my phone, from his family to friend, don't leave anything behind.

Him: On it

Me: Is the guy still tailing her?

Him: Yes sir and she haven't left her apartment today.

Me: If she leaves her apartment let me know.

Him: Very well

He walked out and I turned back to my painting, taking the jacket off I grab my brush and finished up.

ZINHLE ZUNGU- TEDDY

I lazily woke up and took a quick bath then wore my panties with bra, today I didn't even go for my jog, I had to come up with a plan to get back at Blade and actual kill him this time around. I went to have a breakfast then got dressed in jeans, vest and half boots. I looked at my reflection on the mirror the bruises on my neck were showing, I groaned and wrap a scarf around my neck, put on a make up to hide my scars, the last thing I want is people giving me those

“She is a domestic abuse victim”. After I was done I took some cash and requested an uber, I need to get my car then do some grocery. The uber drop me off the hotel where I had left my car, I got in and called Craig.

Craig: What do you want?

I rolled my eyes.

Me: Why you always such a pussy

Craig: We were told you off duty, now what do you want?

I huff.

Me: I need you to get me information on Blade, like where can I find him right now?

Craig: I won't do that; he is no longer your target.

Me: Craig please I need to do this, I must be the one to kill him.

Craig: You called me for shit; you should be thanking me I saved your ass.

He said and dropped the call; I groaned loud hitting the steering wheel. I had one more card to play if this fails too I will have to come up with another plan.

I wait impatiently as the phone ring, I was about to drop up when he finally picked up.

Him: What?

Yoo this guy is always grumpy, jeez.

Me: It me Zinhle

Him: What the fuck you want?

I rolled my eyes; jeez some people need to chill for a sec.

Me: Bhuti Bukhosi I need your help, I can't go on like this things will be worse for me if ... if ...

I sniff pretending to be crying.

Him: I don't have all day, how about I switch off my phone and you can cry all you want then call me after you done.

How is my friend surviving with such cold hearted person, she's too sweet for this bastard. Argh I hate men.

Me: No please I just need you to talk to Mabandla for me, he took me off duty and I can't function well. I am lonely my job is the only thing that is keeping me insane, I am not even allowed at NV's how would I function?

Him: He has his reasons find yourself a friend or whatever shit to keep you busy, stop calling me we are not friends.

I made a disgust face, I won't even make him my friend even if he was the last person on earth.

Me: I can't make friends, Sonto is the only friend I have and you are keeping me away from her.

Him: Don't drag my wife into your shit.

Me: If I don't get back to the game I will have to go to her for a shoulder to cry on, I need either her or to be on duty, please Bhuti Bukhosi. I won't disappoint this time and I will take any mission good guy or bad guy as long as I am back on the game.

Him: Go near my wife with your stinking shit I won't hesitate to blow your brains don't test me.

He said and dropped the call.

Me: Fuck! Fuck!

I said in frustration and driving in a speed, I hit pass the red robot almost causing accident. I left other drivers cursing and calling me names behind my back, lucky me I wasn't stopped by any police.

I drove to my place; I didn't even buy the grocery that I was supposed to buy. I was just so mad none of my plans worked, I will have to make another one very soon and right now I am not sure which.

The only way I can get to Blade is if I have the NV resources other than that I can't. I parked my car on the parking lot then slam closed the doors and walked to my apartment.

My door was slightly open which did freak me out a little, I went down on my boot and grab my knife, I always keep a knife stash on my boots. I slowly open the door wide, on top of the coffee table was a big gift box wrapped in red with a black ribbon. I looked at it suspicious while walking past it tip toing, I checked the kitchen even under the counters then proceed to my room, I checked everything even the closet but everything was still in one piece, I checked the bathroom before walking back to the lounge. Craig or Ride wouldn't have broken in, someone else did and there is an only way to find out who broke in, even though my mind tells me I already know.

I sit on the couch and examine the box; it long shaped in a rectangle meaning whatever is inside is sort of big, there is no note or anything just a box wrapped in red with a black ribbon. I took a deep breath before ripping it opens using my knife; I got the cover off now what was left is to open the box itself. I rubber my hands together and blow some air on my hands for some reason I am kind of not sure about opening this box, what if it a bomb. I grab it with my both hands and lifted up the lid. It a big picture frame wrapped in another red cover, I lifted it out and slowly unwrapped the cover.

Me: You got to be fucking kidding me.

It a painting of him naked, like butt naked with his left arm touching his head flexing those hard muscles, all his tattoos on his arms visible but honestly my eyes drifted to his long, thick, hard cock. His stone hard thighs all the way down to his strong legs, they drifted up to his abs, the hard abs then to his god damn handsome face with clenched jaws.

Me: Damn!

What was God thinking, making a monster like him to be this handsome? When I checked back in the box there was a note, I held the picture and picked up the note.

Hang me amour

He got to be losing his damn mind, fucking stupid asshole. My phone ring on my pocket, I put back the picture before picking up, it Mabandla damn Bukhosi he must have told him I called.

Me: Boss

Mabandla: So you decided to go behind my back and talk to my brother

Me: I didn't go behind your back; I just called him asking for his help. You only listen to him, Mabandla I can't survive without being back on the game, and it keeps me insane please. I will take any mission.

I crossed my fingers hoping this works.

Mabandla: You will take every mission I give you, no being picky whether good guy or bad guy.

Me: Anything as long as I am back in the game

Mabandla: You are still not welcome at NV

Me: Done deal

Mabandla: I will send you information for your next mission easy target.

Me: On it Sir

Mabandla: No more Blade for you.

I looked at the picture he sent me; there is no way I am going to let this fucker get away with the shit he did to me.

Me: No more Blade for me.

Mabandla: I mean it Teddy bear

Me: I swear I am going to focus on the given mission only.

Mabandla: Don't make me regret this shit.

Me: This time no disappointment.

CONSEQUENCES –HATING HIM! BREAKING HER!

I said knowing very well that I will go against my word, and I will go for Blade with everything I got with the help of Craig. Being back on duty means I can get Craig to give me any information on anyone.

FIVE

ZINHLE ZUNGU- TEDDY

I am cooking while listening to music and singing along, things seems to be going okay so this is me celebrating in advance, I had a plan in motion. Craig had given me all the information I need on Blade for today, Mabandla has assigned someone else to kill him but that won't stop me from killing him. He better die before I get to him. I finished cooking and ate then washed the dishes. After I was done I went to take a quick shower, got dressed in jeans and a vest then went back to the lounge where I took his painting and a marking pen then wrote a little sweet message and hanged it on the wall, if you walk from the front door the naked painting of him is the first thing you see. I smiled to myself and went back to my room where I packed a bag with my gun then wore a jacket and put on my boots not leaving the knife. I am not a fool I know he had me tailed, he knows where I live and he knows when I left the house.

I took my hard climbing rope hooked it on my bedroom window then threw it out, all the way down, I live on a fourth floor so the building is quite long. I also threw the bag outside and climbed out using the rope. The moment my feet hit the ground I grab my bag and run toward the fence where I climbed and jump into the street, from there I walked with my head held high, let his spy think I am inside that was the only way I could have my mission accomplished. I took a public taxi to town then called Craig.

Me: Did you get me the car?

Craig: Yes, yellow in colour, opposite Old mutual Khuzimpi road.

Me: You are a star

Craig: Whatever, if you make it out alive Ride and I are hosting a party.

Me: Umm duuh I am not allowed to be anywhere near any of you.

Craig: Don't worry you crossed Blade, his maroon spy is still by your place waiting for you to leave.

I laughed

Me: Perfect my plan is working.

Craig: I believe you will need a place to crash in, babe my bed is big enough for the two of us.

Me: Euw would rather sleep on a hotel.

Craig: More chances for him to catch you, think about it Ted

I rolled my eyes as if he can see me.

Me: Bye motherfucker

I dropped the call and sigh, it getting dark I will have to drive fast so I would be ahead, the taxi drop me off on Smith street I walked to Khuzimpi street where I spotted the yellow car. Craig is definitely a star.

The keys were left inside; I immediately drove off in a speed. Craig had set a GPS for me it guided to the street the driver of the truck with girls would use since they avoid using main road by all means; I was in the middle of nowhere when the car runs out of diesel, I parked aside and got off the car and wore a bum short with a cropped t shirt leaving my boot on. I took the gun and put it on my boot leaving them loose open.

Done, how far are they?

* 30 minutes away from you, good luck*

My phone lost the signal; I took a cigarette and started smoking. After thirty minutes I saw the light approaching me. I took a deep breath, Okay Teddy Bear you got this! You got this Teddy Bear! I said to myself as I walked towards the road and started waving for the truck to stop, it drove past me just a little then stopped. I waited by my car as the driver got off, there are two of them, the other one is driving while the other one is sitting on the passenger seat, good taking them out won't be a problem. As he walk towards me I hugged myself as if I'm scared and cold.

Him: Hello there Miss

Me: Oh thank God, please help me my car ran out of diesel.

I said with tears threatening to come out.

Him: Where you going?

Already his look told me what I want to know, he is a sick bastard like his boss.

Me: Pretoria but I will pass by my Gran's place in Joburgh, I am so scared I forgot to load the diesel please, please help me please.

He smirk s walking towards me.

Him: You do know there is nothing for free.

Me: I got money, I have money I will pay you.

I looked at the truck and there other guy wasn't even looking at us, he touched my cheek with his disgusting hand.

I held his hand and bend it.

Me: Get your fifthly hand off me

Him: What the fuck

I held him and smash his head on my car, he tried to fight back but I kicked him on his dick. He groaned I smash his head again, hard this time making him pass out. When I looked back at the truck the other guy was still not looking our way, I left him lying on the ground and tip toe towards the truck taking my gun out of my boot. He had his headset on laying back on the seat, I opened the door slowly by the time he noticed I had my gun pointed at him and the door wide open.

Me: Get off, hands where I can see them.

He took his headsets off looking at me.

Him: Woah babe what going on?

Me: I said get off

I hissed, he gave me a smile.

Him: Do you know how to use that?

Me: Trust me I was born using this shit

Him: Come on babe, put the Gun away.

I shot his knee, making him scream so loud.

Him: Fuck! You sick bitch

He reached for his gun but before he could take it out I shot him on his head.

Me: Die you fucking asshole.

I walked back to my car and got my bag then burnt down my car leaving the other guy knocked out on the ground beside the road, by the time he wakes up I would be long gone. I walked to the truck and open the back, the girls were there all curled up together with fear written all over their face. I felt for them, I know how it likes to be scared and not knowing what to do, I know how it like to follow orders even if you don't want too, I have been there all my life and I hated every moment of it.

Me: Okay girls don't be scared I am taking you back, okay?

The look on their faces told me they don't believe me, I closed the doors again, lean on the truck and took a deep breath before walking back to the driver's side and got inside, kicked out the dead guy then made a u turn back to Durban. I drove fast by the time we reached CBD it was in a middle of the night, I got off the truck and went to open for them.

Me: Okay girls we here I do not know how you will get home but we back in Durban now.

They looked at each other, some were fast asleep. I took a deep sigh.

Me: I can book you in a hotel or something but when you wake up the next morning you can catch a taxi back to your houses.

They still looked at me without saying anything.

Me: Come on work with me here.

The other lady nods her head.

“Why are you helping us?”

Me: I hate men who think they can get away with abusing defenceless women, wake the others.

They quickly wake each other, they still had their gut on look out as we walk down the dark street towards bay side a cheap hotel, we walked inside all the 21 of us, the guy behind the counter gave us weird looks.

Me: Five rooms.

“We only got two available sorry ladies.”

Me: We will take them for the night only.

I paid for the rooms and paid him extra since we didn't have any IDs. I turn back to the girls as I hand them the keys.

Me: Okay ten, ten each room the first thing you do when you wake up is getting a taxi back home.

They nod their heads. I gave each r100 then walked away.

“Sis”

One of them call out, I looked back at them.

“Thank you, but where you gonna sleep?”

I gave her a small smile.

Me: Don't worry about me. Take care of each other and be careful.

She nods; I hang my bag on my back and walked out feeling really good about the mission I just successful completed.

BLADE

Me: What do you mean she tricked you

“She pretended to be someone in need when I tried to help her she smashed my head against the car and I passed out”

Me: There were two you so you telling me you were beaten by one girl

“When I woke up G was dead”

Me: And the truck

“The truck was also gone”

I dropped the call and lay back on my chair, smartass I give her that but she is messing with my business now. I called the IT guy.

Me: Get me Teddy, I want her alive.

Him: Sir she hasn't left her apartment

Me: What? She is still there

Him: Yes sir

I dropped the call and grab my car keys, I took the elevator up passing by the hoes practising. I hurried to the ground parking and drove towards her place in a speed. If it not her who messed up with my girls that means there is still someone else, a woman out there who is out to get me more reason for me to find out who is she working with, I hit the brakes and got off the guy who has been spying on her walked up to me.

Me: You saying she is still in there?

Him: Yes sir, she hasn't left the house all night

It almost the morning, I took the elevator to her floor arriving on her door I kicked it open. The lights were on and the first thing I saw was my painting with a clean handwriting big enough for anyone to see exactly on my painting.

-Checkmate look who has the last laugh now amour-

I can already imagine the smirk on her face, I chuckled shaking my head. Impressive, I am very impressed she is taking me on. I walked up to the painting.

Me: Check the whole house

I instructed the guy then gentle touched her hand writing.

Me: Impressive, very smart amour I hope you know the game you playing is very dangerous.

I never in my whole life had a girl standing up on me let alone fighting me, well I am up for a challenge.

"Sir you have to see this"

The guy called out from the bedroom, I walked there to check again I couldn't be more impressed. On the window was a rope she must have used it to climb out. I took out my phone and made the call.

Me: Find her, alive and kicking.

SIX

ZINHLE ZUNGU- TEDDY

Page | 41

It has been two weeks in a hiding, I moved in with Ride and Craig who are housemate it only for temporary once I find my own place I am moving out. Not that I am complaining living with them have been really good, for some reason I feel like they are my brothers, the two brothers I once lost and the best part I always have any information I want and another bonus Craig is teaching me some few tricks when it comes to hacking. I salute this guy he is just too smart yet you wouldn't notice. I have even learn to steal money from the wealthy and had it deposited to some orphanages, girl I am enjoying this hacking thing and I bet I am getting really awesome skills that I might need in future but I have been sleeping a lot lately and I feel funny. I can't stomach anything; even the guys have started giving me those "see a doctor look"

"Ted did you cook"

Ride shout from the game room, their house is just too big for three of us; a three story with a huge swimming pool, TV room, game room, theatre room, bar room and lot and lot of unnecessary rooms. I walked past the game room with a bottle of beer on my hand ignoring him.

Ride: Come on Teddy bear, you know we love your cookings.

Me: I am sick Ride order something

Ride: Argh back to take out again, man can you just die already.

Me: You will miss me

He followed me to the pool.

Ride: Pssh please I won't even notice you gone.

I rolled my eyes.

Me: yea right

He snatches my beer from my hand and sat beside me with his legs inside the water mind you he is wearing jeans.

Me: Heey go get your own beer.

Ride: Have you checked the microwave, I made you some stupid soup for whatever shit you got. My granny always made me and it always made me feel good.

I sort of laughed.

Me: You made me a soup.

Ride: That what I fucking said.

He said and stood up walking away leaving me laughing.

Ride: You laughing like a dead mouse

I laughed even more.

Me: You sweet like ice cream Ride.

He gave me a middle finger and disappeared inside.

I rolled my eyes with a smile on my face and played with my feet on the water.

I don't know if Craig is here or not, this house is just too big to know and that guy is always locked with his computers on his private room he calls the service.

Later on I went to take a bath and ate Ride's soup. Everything in this house has codes, if you want to access the fridge there is a code, microwave, doors to rooms some have codes some just finger prints.

Ride: hey where is Craig

I shrugged my shoulders.

Craig: I am here, you missed me kids?

He said walking in with some guy.

Ride: You wish

Craig: Mxm, Ted this is Doctor Mill he is here for you

Me: What? A doctor, it just a stomach bug.

Ride: That lasted for a week, yea sure

Me: Heey I am fine

Craig: Let the doctor be the judge of that I am tired of eating take out

Ride: Me too bro

Me: I am moving out pretty soon you lazy motherfuckers.

I sulk going upstairs with the doctor following me. I punch the code of my door then it opened and we got in.

Him: Miss Ted so what seems to be the problem?

I threw myself on top of the bed while he sits on my small couch.

Me: Ah ... you know ...just been tired lately ... I throw up sometimes ...I feel weird

Him: Miss when was the last time you had your circles.

I got stuck as if someone just strikes me with lightning.

Me: Oh my God

I jump off bed.

Me: Oh my God I can't be pregnant, oh my God no

I said and started pacing up and down.

Me: that fucking sick punk didn't use a condom, oh shit what if I am pregnant? Or worse HIV? Oh God how can I be so stupid.

Him: Miss I will need you to calm down.

Me: How the fuck can I be so careless, I have been caught up in revenging myself I even forgot about safety and pregnancy.

I kept pacing up and down.

Him: Ted you really don't need to worry, we will do some test and see the result.

I ignored him and kept pacing up and down while pulling my hair.

BLADE

The screams filled the room as they scream their lungs out. I held the whip tight against my hand, there are three of them all bound with their ass facing up and face flat on the bed. I walked to the dark chocolate girl in the middle with a nice round ass that is so grab able. I spank it with my hand before whipping it hard, what I love about black ass they never turn red, they just turn green, she screamed out loud. I walked to the third girl, a yellow bone with a small ass, not my cup of tea but I know the guys would be happy to have her. I whipped her twice and her small ass instantly turned red, I whipped her again loving the colour the whip leave on her ass. I walked back to the first girl with the ass to die for, really huge and fuckable. I grab it with my both hands filling my hands perfectly, damn she's gonna make me some real money, the low self-esteem type with small dicks prefer bitches with an ass. I whipped her three times; she screamed matching the others screamed. I had given them ten whips each. For some weird reason I wondered if Miss little to good would cry if I were to whip her of which I doubt, she would probably try to break free and kill my ass. I shake my head off her memory, she messed up with my business and I can't find her. She just disappeared to thin air, she better stay in the hiding for ever like a bitch she is.

Me: I will untie you now; tonight you will be working at the VIP section. It part of your second training one of you fail, or does anything stupid you all get punished.

I said as I untie them one by one.

Me: Go to your rooms, prepare yourselves for tonight. No mistakes the next punishment will be more hash and painful.

They nod their heads not looking at me.

They are new girls, those ten girls that were left in the warehouse. I had them delivered here and the past few weeks was a lesson, I showed them I was in control by not giving them food, or making sure they get one meal per day with just one glass of water, no bathing and no going outside the room. I doubt

they still know how the sun look like or how green is the glass outside. I wanted them to know I was in charged, I call the shot now that we past the lesson stage we in their initial training. I was punishing them because the girl with the small ass failed to please my client since it was the three of them in duty I had to punish them all, one fail all suffer. They all walked out in pain with red asses. I threw the whip on top of the bed and walked out.

I drove to our secret place, the underworld world where all types of shit happen. Upon my arrival I walked past the security guy all the way to my office where I took my gun and walked back to the hall room where the action take place. The guys that work for me were already there.

Me: Good you here and no one is late.

Them: No boss

They all mumbled.

Me: I need twenty girls before the end of this week, we have auction on the weekend.

They all looked at each other without saying anything.

Me: Is there a problem

“Boss it already Wednesday I doubt we will manage to get twenty girls for the weekend”

I looked at the guy who just complained, it sad he is one of my best men. I pulled up my gun and shot him on his chest, exactly on his heart. The guys’ gaps a little but composed themselves.

Me: Anyone with a problem.

They all went quiet.

Me: Good I want solutions not problems now get the fuck off here and go get me those hoes.

Them: Sure boss

The said and walked out, Malika a lady who makes sure the underworld is quirky clean showed up in her bikini and apron.

Malika: Mr B

She winks at me.

Me: Hi Malika you look nice

Her smile widen, I left her there and walked away.

I looked at her picture on my phone and wondered where it went wrong, she is very beautiful. She deserves love, and a little bit of care. How I wish I could be the person she love. My phone ringed for the million times today but still I ignored it. She is fast asleep on the picture I stole when we were still fucking; I have so many wishes when it comes to her. I want her to be my wife, I want her to be the Queen of my people they sure do need someone like her. Now that my Dad id dying I will have no choice but to marry whoever they choose for me since I can't find the woman I love and who loves me back for me. My phone ring again and this time it not Dad, it my younger sister Lwandle.

I picked up and sigh.

Lwandle: What has your father done now? You sound like you are carrying a whole elephant.

Me: The usual, get married Lumka, Lumka you need a wife before taking over the throne, Lumka this Lumka that, I swear being born into royalty is a curse.

Lwandle: Come on don't say that, you know Daddy means well.

I exhale loudly.

Me: I know, why you calling.

Lwandle: Oh I called to tell you that I am coming to Durban for the weekend.

Me: Okay

Lwandle: and I need a new phone.

Me: But Lwandile bought you a phone last month.

Lwandle: The screen has cracked and I want a different model if you help me I will help you get that get who rejected your proposal.

Me: Oh you are happy, you rejoicing on my expense.

Lwandle: Of course not Bhuti, you were not romantic this time with my help she will never say no.

Me: Yea right, you don't know her like I do.

Lwandle: get me that phone.

Me: Fine

She giggled happily.

Lwandle: Yes! Oh and about the girl, we have Mabona for that.

Me: What you mean?

Lwandle: Just get Mabona to mix you some strong love portion then she is all yours

She said then drops the call with no goodbye.

Lwandle is my sister the apple of the family, the baby of the family we all adore her. She is the only girl with five brothers so we over protective when it comes to her. I lie on my bed and wondered where Ted was, maybe she is trouble she

always attract trouble. Or maybe in her place just walking around half naked, she loved that back when I used to visit her place.

I sigh.

I would pay a million for someone to tell me how to make a girl you are mad over heels in love with to love you back but nothing that will have to do with love portions, no thanks Lwandle is crazy I don't want fake forced love.

CONSEQUENCES –HATING HIM! BREAKING HER!

SNIPPET –

ZINHLE ZUNGU- TEDDY

Me: Shoot them Simi if you don't shoot them they will hurt you.

Simi: Just please shut up, it not that easy.

Me: Don't let all the training we did to go in vain, prove your worth.

All the three of them came towards her, she's panicking and I am waiting impatient in the car. They took out their knives.

Me: Simi do it

I said throughout the earplug we communicating with.

Me: Shoot the one with the knife first then go for there other two.

She didn't respond, her hand went to her bag and she took out the gun hiding it on her behind.

Me: Close your eyes and just pull the trigger.

Simi: I can do this

She pointed the gun on them, I can't see their reaction as I am across the street far from them, but she pulled the trigger by the time the other two tried to reach for their guns she was quick to notice and shoot them.

I smirk to myself.

Me: Nice one Simi.

She run towards the car and got in we then drove off.

Me: Good job.

Simi: Oh my God my hands are still shaking.

She said looking at them.

Me: Don't feel bad they deserved it.

She exhales loudly.

Simi: Where to now, I pass this test right?

Me: Yep, high five

We high five, she was still a little bit shaken up.

BLADE

"Sir three of the guys that recruit at club 808 were killed last night"

Me: What?

"And the girls they had recruited were released we don't know where they are"

Me: It her again isn't?

“It her sir”

Me: Fuck this bitch; i am losing customers because of her games.

I lay back on the chair.

Me: Where ever you find her, kill her.

“Done deal”

I dropped the call same time as Shane walked in my sister’s study.

Shane: Oh so this is where you are hiding?

I ignored him and just stare into space; I need to fly back to Durban as soon as possible.

Shane: The clients were complaining they didn’t get the girls; people are losing trust on the Bloods they say we no longer deliver.

Me: I run the underworld, the Bloods run the underworld and we always deliver and we will deliver.

Shane: It sure doesn’t look like it on my side.

Me: If you got nothing better to say then get the fuck out.

He raised his hands in surrender.

Shane: Whatever game you playing with that hoe just know it will cost us.

He said and walked out. Ted must die; she has gone too far, messing with my business that was a final cup.

MABANDLA

Zee: Find her

Me: I said I will find her now will you get off my back.

Zee: You said that months ago, what Ntando do you want her? Is that why you not even bothering finding her, you want to fuck her don’t you?

Me: I am not your friend Zee don’t talk shit to me, I said I will fucking find her. Ted is smart she knows we looking for her.

Zee: Ted! Ted! My foot, her name is fucking Zinhle stop fucking calling her Ted. She fucking put a note on my son’s bag how the fuck is it hard to find her.

Me: Don’t you think I know that, she won’t harm the kids so relax.

Zee: Don’t fucking tell me to relax, just find her or else

Me: Or else what?

She didn’t respond she just looked at me in the eyes.

Zee: Find her Mabandla, find her.

She said and walked away.

Zee: I am giving you till the end of this week to find her.

She walked out slamming the door behind her.

Me: Fuck Ted!

I took my phone and called my brother Nkosi.

Me: We can't find her

Him: The fuck, her tracker is still flashing.

Me: She took out her tracker and put it in a dog.

Him: What?

Me: Smart I know. Bro Spinach is our only bait

Him: Not my wife man, not my wife. She won't get involved in this shit.

I rub my head rough.

Me: I know, I know.

Him: We will find her and when we do we kill her.

Me: Okay and what about Spinach.

Him: What he doesn't know won't hurt her.

Me: Okay let keep looking.

Lumka

Lwandle: Stop looking depressed

I took a deep sigh.

Me: How can I not, your father is on my case with Ted refused my proposal I have no choice but to marry that old ugly Pig.

She laughed out so loud.

Me: See you are even laughing at me; I hate being born into royalty.

Lwandle: I am sorry Bhuti but this is funny.

Me: mxm

I gulp down the rest of my drink.

Lwandle: You really do love this Ted?

Me: I love her so much sis it too bad she doesn't feel the same.

Lwandle: Nonsense I say let find Ted we will explain to her why you and her must get married.

I chuckled she won't agree, that girl is different.

Lwandle: Everyone has a price Bhuti, trust me. I got this.

I just rolled my eyes and took a deep breath.

Hello fam, this is just a Snippet of what to come. Seems like everyone is out to get Ted, apologies in advance I won't be able to post today and tomorrow we will be back to our schedule on Tuesday. Little patient please, Love you still.

SEVEN

ZINHLE ZUNGU- TEDDY

Tears stream down my cheeks; I looked at the pill for quite some time before closing my eyes and swallowing it then gulp down a glass of water. The doctor indeed found me pregnant and there was no way I was going to keep this baby. Keeping a baby of a man I hate and want dead, being pregnant will hold me back and I doubt I still have that motherly side of me. I walked back to my room from the bathroom and just lay there staring at the ceiling, my heart was so heavy and I couldn't stop the tears from streaming down. I put both of my hands on my tummy and just lay there awake. It didn't take long before I felt sharp pain on my stomach, I wrap my hands around it and curled up on the bed and let the tears fall. The pain lasted for hours and hours, finally it was over I drag my weak self to the bathroom. Blood was all over my pyjama pants I bath and wore another pad then went back to sleep. The doctor has given me two pills, one was to drink before going to bed and another one I will drink it first thing in the morning to clean my womb.

The following day I woke up feeling like shit, I went to take a long well deserved bath then drink the pill and went down stairs where I found Ride and Craig throwing food at each other, these two are like kids being around them is a breath of fresh air.

Craig: Hey you good, the Boss have summoned us all.

I grab an apple and took a bite.

Me: What's up?

Ride: Don't talk with food in your mouth

I rolled my eyes at him and showed him a middle finger.

Craig: Blade

I stopped chewing instantly.

Me: Woah are they killing him already

Craig: That what the boss want to discuss or and he told me to tell you that you have a mission this evening, easy shit in and out.

Me: Haven't been in a game for a while, who am I killing.

Craig: Some stupid man who married a gold digger now the bitch wants him dead.

I didn't like the sound of that; this means I will be killing an innocent human being who didn't hurt anyone. This is not how I roll but I know Mabandla this is more like a test for me.

Me: Okay let bounce so I would prepare for my mission today.

Ride: Oh and I am willing to sell you a beach house for 200k

Me: What 200k, seriously.

Ride: Take it or leave it.

I wink at him

Me: You know what make it 250k

They both laughed.

Craig: Is this you being a blesser.

Me: Fuck off.

We all left the house in one car driving towards NV, whatever plan Mabandla has I just hope he will include me. No one want Blade dead more than me. Now that I have aborted his baby I want him to die even more. I hate that guy with everything in me.

We arrived at the NV pretty soon, Ride is a fast driver. When we got there we went straight to the meeting room where we meet up whenever we are summoned. The others were already there; they gave me not so pleased looks at all.

“What is she doing here boss”

Argh I hate when they do this shit.

Mabandla: Teddy Bear, Ride and Craig how sweet of you to finally join us

He said ignoring the guy talking shit.

Craig: Some of us have really comfortable beds

“You can say that again”

Bukhosi said getting in, he is hardly here in fact he is never here. He comes once in a while and for him to be here it means whatever shit to discuss it really important.

Mabandla: Oh look who decided to grace us with his presence, praise Spinach’s cookie.

Mabandla is friendly, always throwing jokes where necessary. I like him; I really do like him unlike his stone hard brother who walks around with a hard face as if the world stinks. The only time he is less hard and more softer is when his wife is around. She kind of brings out the good in him.

Bukhosi: Shut the fuck up and get to business I have a pregnant wife and kids waiting for me home.

Me: Pregnant! Again!

He gave me a dead stare, and I was just left with my eyes popped out.

Me: She is definitely turning into a baby making machine.

Bukhosi: Mabandla get to the fucking business already.

He ignored me and addressed his brother.

Mabandla: Okay baby making machine daddy.
He said laughing irritating Bukhosi even more.

Mabandla: Okay the guy assigned to kill Blade is dead.
I chuckled bitterly.

Me: I knew he was going to be slaughtered

Mabandla gave me a nasty look then went back to talking.

Mabandla: Blade sort of found out he was being tailed and well he killed him
so from now on Ride is taking over the mission.

Me: Oh come on, I can kill him let me have this mission one more time for the
last time this time.

Again all I got was a nasty look and some lousy smirks from the guys.

Mabandla: He is hosting an auction this weekend and the plan is you getting
there as a buyer and kill him.

He said looking at Ride, what a stupid plan.

Me: So you are telling Ride to walk in a lion's den

Bukhosi: Do you ever shut up.

I rolled my eyes and sit back on the chair.

Mabandla: We have a backup in place, and we will go through step by step on
how you will complete the mission with no scratch.

Bukhosi: That where I come in, I will guide you into making sure you kill him. It
pretty easy though you get in there, ask to talk to him in private then strike but
you must make a purchase of at least one girl

Me: Wait that auction is for girls, they are selling them, hell no I am going there
too.

Mabandla: No you not, on weekend you got two mission to complete. I will
send you details on Friday.

Bukhosi: Since Ride's mission is more dangerous five guys will be there for
backup, two in with him and three outside.

Ride: I can pull this shit alone.

Me: Pssh

Bukhosi: Ride pick the guys you want in your crew, except her

Mabandla: Teddy Bear follow me so I would brief you about your today's
mission.

I groaned and rolled my eyes following after him. He did brief me on my killing
and it an easy Job, I am killing CEO of some company so that his wife will claim
money, I may be against this shit but I have no choice but to deliver.

The music bust through the speakers, light flash around, laughter and high chatting voices echoed so loudly. Some are dancing while others are just sitting by the booth or bar drinking, it way too crowded. I run my eyes around, spotting girls to take. She captured my eyes as she is sitting all alone busy on her phone, she must be that type, the type that is forced by friends to come to a club when she doesn't vibe with clubs and my guess is she might be a virgin and god damn she will make me lot and lot of money. I signal for one of the guys to keep an close eye on her, then my eyes went back to roaming around spotting girls to take. With just one night I have spotted three girls, perfect. I left the club and took the elevator to the other rooms.

“Oh thank God you here sir, I found something on the guy who was tailing you.”

My IT guy said rushing to me and that more like good news.

Him: He trained at NV security but the person who owns the NV is dead.

Me: What do you mean dead?

Him: Ntando Vezi an ex-military died right after opening the NV security of which is just a company that specialise in security I am not sure as too why he was following you around.

Me: You mean to tell me that guy is just a security.

Him: Yes sir.

Me: Where can I find this NV security Company?

Him: Eish I can't find their exact location as yet.

Me: Then come to me when you got all the information I need.

Him: Yes sir

Me: Anything on that girl

Him: No sir she is still in the hiding but I am running every camera around town if she shows up you will be the first to know.

Me: Good let it be soon I am tired of this cat and mouse shit.

Him: On it sir

Me: And make sure you find me everything I need to know about the NV, i need to know who run it since the guy who started it is died.

Him: I will make sure I find out.

Me: Before the end of this day, I have a feeling there is more into it then they let on.

Him: let me get to it.

He said walking away.

I took out my phone and called Vic a guy who is in charge of my other clubs back in Joburgh.

Vic: Sure

Me: It looks like I will be on this side a little longer there is someone who wants me dead.

He chuckled.

Vic: Everyone wants you dead

Me: he has hired two assassin to kill me, this is more personal then I had thought.

Vic: Should I come that side just in case you need me burning them alive.

Me: Don't worry I got this.

Vic: I got five new girls should I ship them there?

Me: Keep them for now, will let you know if I need more.

Vic: Shout if you need me.

Me: Sure

I dropped the call

ZINHLE ZUNGU- TEDDY

Killing the CEO guy was just too easy; I broke into his house and shot him on his head then left. His wife and kids were out. Now I am driving to Blade's night club, the one he had me hostage at. I will free the girls before he auction them. The question is how am I going to do that? I parked across the street. It dark but with street light I can see people leaving and arriving. I'm wearing a light blue wig with a short red dress, I had to wear like that just in case Blade is still out there looking for me, and with this outfit you can hardly tell it me. I took a very deep breath and got off the car, did that killer walk towards the entrance.

Me: Hello handsome

The bouncer just looked at me with his hard ugly face.

Me: I'm over eighteen

He shift and I got in, loud music and laughter greeted me. I walked towards the bar while looking around making sure I am extra vigilant. I ordered a drink and just stood there checking the cost. If I could get to go down stairs where there are rooms I know damn well I will get the girls. The question is how the fuck am I going to get there without being caught.

"Hi"

A voice of a girl said behind me, I turned to look at her then instantly recognised her.

Me: Hi

Her: I knew it was you

Me: Sorry

Her: The girl who saved us the other day.

Me: And you still here, want to be kidnapped again

Her: You won't understand

Me: Try me

Her: It personal

Me: Try me, I can see you are safe and sound but still you come to the club of a man who tried to traffic you.

Her: He killed my sister.

She said with tears threatening to come.

Her: He just shoot her like some dog, I am here because I want him dead.

I laughed.

Me: And who is going to kill him, you?

Her: Yes

I laughed even more.

Me: You hilarious

She slides her hand in her bag and came out with a small teddy bear and a needle.

Me: What is that?

Her: You see this if I stab this with the needle he is going to feel pain, the same pain that will end up killing him.

Me: Witchcraft! Is it working?

Her: That why I am here, I want to see if it will work but I can't see him anywhere.

She said tapping her foot on the floor impatiently.

Me: This is crazy, that shit won't kill him.

Her: How do you know, the lady said this thing will work.

Me: And you believed her.

She took a deep sigh and settled on the chair beside me.

Her: He deserve death, he is cruel. I hate him.

I thought for a while.

Me: Come with me, no one want that man dead more than me.

Her: You want to kill him

Me: Once tried and failed but I won't fail for a second time. We need a solid plan, starting with messing with his business.

Her: Meaning?

Me: Well we will start by helping all the girls he has kidnap once we mess with his business he will be irrational and won't be able to think things through so

his mission will be finding us and killing us and that where we will strike when he is not thinking straight with his focus on killing us.

She looked at me for a while.

Me: Let get out of here so I would brief you about our new strategy.

She nods her head and we both stood up and walked out to my car.

Her: I'm Simi

Me: Teddy

EIGHT

ZINHLE ZUNGU- TEDDY

Simi couldn't go back to her house apparently she has a problem with her stepfather and her mother is sucking up to him since I couldn't bring her back to the house with me I booked her in a hotel. I am on my way back to the village to get money to buy the beach house from Ride. I couldn't bank my money since it would've raised too many suspicions as to where I get that kind of cash so I had it buried at my old house back in the village where I was born and raised, where my family was killed. Going there won't be easy, even though the ruthless motherfucker is now dead and our people are free I still get cold shivers when I am there, it a long drive I finally made it when I got there I drove straight to my house, it was now really old with a falling off roof but the walls were still standing strong, the glass on the yard was long but the village was at peace even the air was fresh, people's gardens were blooming, everything was just beautiful. I parked the car and got off, unlock my door and closed it again then I started digging till I reached an close underground door that I made and by that time I was sweating and tired. I took the key and wide open the door then jump inside so what I did is I dig a big whole like a tunnel shit then from there I built an big inside box using woods and my money in in another box that is big enough, when I jump in I took another key and opened the other box then took out one brief case which had half a million, that is more than enough considering the fact that I had about 200k with me back in the car which I am planning on leaving behind. I honestly can't believe this is me with this shit loads of money when I use to struggle a lot. I jump out and went to put the brief case inside the car then took another one and stash it back to my bank and locked everything, buried it down and levelled up everything then covered it with carpet. I didn't hang around I got back in my car and drove off but parked my car outside Sonto's big house that has been extended a lot lately. The yard was more beautiful now; it was like those expensive houses you usually see in the city.

Me: I hope you are fine Ma Betty

I said more to myself, there light were on meaning she is home and still up.

Ma Betty is a very kind woman who used to work for Bukhosi as his housekeeper when she met Sonto my friend she became a mother to her, and she came back from the city to live here in the village and became a mother to

me too, she's very kind hearted and loving and her hugs are totally the best thing ever, her warm smile always bring hope. She indeed the best woman I have ever came across.

I took a deep sigh.

Driving back to the city was one hell of a distance, it was already late and I was dog tired I can't even remember how many energy drinks I had consumed. The moment I got to the house I went to sleep without even bathing only woke up the following day in the middle of the day with missed calls from Simi. I went to freshen up and went down stairs where I found Ride staring into space, playing with a small ball while sitting on the couch.

Me: You look like you just got strike by lightning.

He threw the ball to the wall and it bounce back, he catch it then turned to me.

Ride: hahah very funny

Me: Stressed about killing the almighty

Ride: Pssh me stressed, babe I will kill that man on my sleep.

Me: Yea right, let talk business I have the money sign the house to me.

He jumps off the couch.

Ride: Now you talking my language, 250k

Me: Yes

He smirks looking at me.

Ride: You really need to find something to spend your money on.

Me: This is me spending my money, buying my house.

Craig walked in dragging his feet.

Craig: Damn the Blade guy is sick, can you believe this son of a bitch just put out 5million for whoever will get him you.

Me: me?

Craig: Yes and right now everyone on the dark web is looking for you, one mistake they get you.

Me: Damn I didn't know I was a wanted.

I took Craig tablet and checked; Blade had indeed put a drawn picture of me on the internet offering whoever finds me money.

Me: This is bullshit

Craig: Better watch your moves, these people can hack to any cameras around Durban, avoid walking around the street.

Me: Mxm, Ride I would like to move in my house as in today so please get the papers ready.

Ride: You moving out so soon

Craig: Who is gonna cook for us.

Me: Who was cooking for you before I moved in?

Ride: We were living off take out

Me: Well take out it is again boys I am going to pack.

Ride: That house is fully furnished add another 100k

He shouts after me as I take two stairs at a time.

Me: Go to hell!

I shout back and stopped walking then turned to them.

Me: Craig I need you to install this tight security on my new house.

Ride: Worry not, already got that shit sorted.

Me: Perfect

I went to my room and started packing; I had to move as fast as possible so Simi will have a place to stay.

The house was big and really beautiful, a two story that overlook the sea such a perfect view and fresh air. I liked it, no I loved it. After I had settled in and unpack my clothes I went to fetch Simi from the hotel, I had to wear a wig and wrap a scarf to hide myself. I am not stupid I had to check Simi before I could get her anywhere near me. I used my newly found skills and checked her out, she is legit. Just a girl from Nanda and I could work with her. We drove to the house she could not believe how exquisite the house is, she kept complimenting it, and she picked the room and settled. I brief her on our plan and she agreed to undergo training but we had no time so the plan was to teach her how to use a gun. It pretty easy the difficult part will be killing someone.

Simi: I never held a gun before

Me: You just need to relax keep calm and hold it with your two hands

Simi: Oh God I am scared

Me: Relax will you

I am not the patient type, if she wants to do it she should just do it and if she doesn't want to do it she should just stick to her witchcraft.

Simi: But still I am s...

Me: Hey look if you want to do it do it or just fucking stick to your witchcraft; decide man.

She kept quit for a while.

Simi: Why you doing this?

Me: Doing what?

Simi: Killing

I raised an eye brow.

Me: Who did I kill?

Simi: I mean why you want to kill him

Me: I have my reasons, now will you fucking decide time is ticking

Simi: Okay, ok I will do it.

Me: You do know we will have to train all night.

Simi: The sooner the better.

Me: Perfect

I had prepare where we gonna train by the sea, no one goes to the sea at night unless they are witches. I had put some tin for her to shoot, it pretty easy all she need is a good aim as I said the hard part is only killing an actual person.

LUMKA

The door opened and her loud voice echoed throughout the whole house.

Lwandle: Honey I am home!

I walked from the kitchen to the lounge to my surprise she wasn't alone.

Me: What is Mabona doing here?

Lwandle: Did Mom and Dad forget to teach you some manners?

I sigh rolling my eyes.

Me: Good afternoon Princess

Lwandle: Hello my Prince that more like it.

I smiled and hug her then turned to Mabona behind her, Mabona is the royalty's greatest traditional healer.

Me: Mabona

She bows a little.

Her: My Prince

Me: Hope you are well and you travelled well?

Her: I am well my Prince, our journey was long.

Me: Lwandle shouldn't have brought you all the way here.

Her: I do not mind my Prince, Princess Lwandle said it very important and you needed my help.

Me: She exaggerated; let me take you to your room so you would rest.

She bows again.

Her: Thank you my Prince.

She took her bags and I led a way to a spare room. I need to sort my loud sister out, how can she bring Mabona here. She thank me and walked inside, I

walked back down stairs where I found my sister's bags still by the door and her sitting on the couch relaxing.

Me: Are you seriously going to leave your bags there.

Lwandle: I will take them, let talk about more important things Ted.

Me: Okay Princess take your bags to your room, there are no servants to run after you here. And Ted is none of your business.

She groaned and stood up to pick her bags

BLADE

My door bust open with no knock, the IT guy walked in with his PC.

Him: Sir she was here.

I just looked at him.

Him: Ted was here last night.

Me: And what should I do with that shit? You saying she was here won't help me with anything now please leave and come back when you have shit I can use.

Him: Sorry sir

He walked out.

Me: Nx

So miss little too good tested the water and came to my place, I chuckled this girl got balls. I walked out of my room to the auction room, tomorrow it finally the auctioning day they only managed to get seventeen girls it cool though I can work with them. The girls will be moved tomorrow evening from club 808 to here. I checked the auction room; everything was fine and ready for tomorrow all I need to do is make sure everything goes as planned, no mistakes.

NINE

ZINHLE ZUNGU- TEDDY

Page | 63

Simi and I didn't sleep we trained throughout the whole night. Mabandla has sent me my mission but I didn't even check it we had training to do. I called Craig who told me Blade has girls kept on different location and Ride had been granted access inside the auctioning room. I wished Ride a good luck while I staged how to get to the girls. It pretty easy, they want girls and we are girls. I had a plan and I was hoping it will work.

Simi came running in my study room.

Simi: Your phone is ringing.

She handed me and left again, it Mabandla.

Me: Boss

Mabandla: Teddy Bear I want the mission to be done tonight do not make any mistakes.

Me: Tonight

Mabandla: Do not go for Blade

Me: I won't

Mabandla: I mean it

Me: I swear I won't

Mabandla: If you do just know you are dead, I will personally kill you.

Me: I said I won't

Mabandla: Okay.

He dropped the call and I rolled my eyes. I'm doing it, whether he wants me too or not, I will do it.

Later that day Simi and I got ready for a night in a club. We parked at the parking lot and waited

Me: Okay Simi take this as tests if you fail just know we are done.

She took a deep breath.

Simi: What do I do?

Me: This is an earplug we will communicate using it, the moment they came out with girls you going to walk around pretending to be drunk.

Simi: I can do that

Me: It might get tricky you might have to shoot them.

She rubs her hands together.

Me: It pretty easy you just pull the trigger.

Simi: Okay

She says taking another deep breath. I handed her the gun.

Me: You remember everything I taught you.

Simi: Yes

Me: Don't mess this up, if you do I will fucking kill you

It was just a threat. She looked at me with her eyes popped out.

Me: Girl shit is real out here I can't let you walk away after discovering the shit I do.

Simi: I will do it

Me: Yes you will babe girl

We heard voices coming to the parking, we lay back in the car and watched them as they load the girls in the truck, it only three guys killing them would be easy.

Me: Get out and distract them I will get the girls.

She took a deep breath and hid the gun then got out.

They were done loading the girls and they were about to drive off when Simi came by their car busy cussing and pretending to be throwing up.

Simi: Shit, help!

They all got off the truck and approached her but screams of the girls inside the truck freaked her and she started running off.

Me: Don't run

Simi: There are camera's here they might take the video to the police.

Working with Mabandla I never had to worry about police. I let her run off as they chased after her I quickly got off the car and went to take the girls out.

Me: Run for your life, if they catch you again it none of my business I tried.

They didn't even wait to ask questions the 17 girls I just rescued run off and never looked back. I got in my car and drove off after Simi who was still in a run. I spotted her by the street where they had cornered her.

Me: Shoot them Simi if you don't shoot them they will hurt you.

Simi: Just please shut up, it not that easy.

Me: Don't let all the training we did to go in vain, prove your worth.

All the three of them came towards her, she's panicking and I am waiting impatient in the car. They took out their knives.

Me: Simi do it

I said throughout the earplug we communicating with.

Me: Shoot the one with the knife first then go for the other two.

She didn't respond, her hand went to her bag and she took out the gun hiding it on her behind.

Me: Close your eyes and just pull the trigger.

Simi: I can do this

She pointed the gun on them, I can't see their reaction as I am across the street far from them, but she pulled the trigger by the time the other two tried to reach for their guns she was quick to notice and shoot them.

I smirk to myself.

Me: Nice one Simi.

She run towards the car and got in we then drove off.

Me: Good job.

Simi: Oh my God my hands are still shaking.

She said looking at them.

Me: Don't feel bad they deserved it.

She exhales loudly.

Simi: Where to now, I passed this test right?

Me: Yep, high five

We high five, she was still a little bit shaken up.

BLADE

I had just arrived at the auction room when I received a call from one of the guys who were supposed to get the girls at club 808.

"Sir three of the guys that recruit at club 808 were killed"

Me: What?

"And the girls they had recruited were released we don't know where they are"

Me: It her again isn't?

"It her sir"

Me: Fuck this bitch; i am losing customers because of her games. Where ever you find her, kill her.

She can't be doing this to me tonight; of all night tonight is not the night. I kept pacing up and down trying to calm myself. The auction room kept getting full, my clients were here and I had to tell them there won't be any girls no fucking ways. I ran out to my car and drove off while making a call.

Me: Check all public cameras from club 808 for Teddy and send me her location.

"On it sir"

It clear I have to do everything myself, the people I hire ain't doing a good job at all. I drove off towards club 808, I was so damn frustrated and she must pray I don't find her.

My phone ring, it my cousin Shane.

Me: Shane

Him: You just left, the clients are waiting.

Me: Tell them the auction is cancelled.

Him: What?

Me: There are no girls someone is messing with me.

Him: Who?

Me: Just do as I say

Him: Sure

I dropped the call same time as my phone beeped with a message saying she is on the run heading south coast. I drove on a high speed following after her.

Another message came through with a video of the street she has turned into. I drove fast when her car took another turn I was there on her tails. She drove into a beach house; I parked far from her house and watched as she parked out of the garage, got off followed by another girl and they both went inside the house. There are two of them, interesting. I got off the car and went towards her gate but it was obviously locked. I walked towards the back on a small wooden gate they use for going to the beach. The balcony light went on and the other Ted showed up and started pacing up and down, she would pull her hair, hold on to her knees.

Ummh maybe they fought. My ringing phone stopped me from breaking the small gate and get in.

Me: What now Shane

Him: Shit is happening here people are shooting each other.

Me: Who is shooting who?

Him: I don't know man your clients are shooting each other

Me: Then handle the fucking situation

Him: I tried! I tried! It too much you need to get here

Me: Shane handle that shit I am busy here

Him: I am having everyone killed

Me: Do whatever shit you gotta do as long as it doesn't come to bite us

I said and dropped the call, the drugs that he sniffs are messing him up big time.

LUMKA

Lwandle: Stop looking depressed

I took a deep sigh.

Me: How can I not, your father is on my case with Ted refused my proposal I have no choice but to marry that old ugly Pig.

She laughed out so loud. My Dad had chosen an old Princess from another Kingdom for me to marry since I can't come up with a wife on my own.

Me: See you are even laughing at me; I hate being born into royalty.

Lwandle: I am sorry Bhuti but this is funny.

Me: mxm

I gulp down the rest of my drink.

Lwandle: You really do love this Ted?

Me: I love her so much sis it too bad she doesn't feel the same.

Lwandle: Nonsense I say let find Ted we will explain to her why you and her must get married.

I chuckled she won't agree, that girl is different.

Lwandle: Everyone has a price Bhuti, trust me. I got this.

I just rolled my eyes and took a deep breath.

Lwandle: I say let find her offer her money she cannot refuse

Me: And if she don't take it

Lwandle: You seem to forget how persuasive I can be, she will never say no to me.

I chuckled; Lwandle doesn't know Ted like I do.

Lwandle: If she decline our offer then we will have to come up with another plan, like love potion.

Me: Hell no

Lwandle: Then let go get her and offer her money

Me: Where would we find her? She moved

Lwandle: Mabona can find anyone and anything

Me: Oh yea Mabona

I said rolling my eyes.

Me: I am getting a feeling you are turning into a witch

She laughed.

Lwandle: I am just trying to help you here

Me: Okay let find her first.

Lwandle: Yes

She jumps up and down dancing.

ZINHLE ZUNGU – TEDDY

I poured myself a glass of red wine and sat on the couch, this is more like a celebration of Blade's downfall, I hope Ride kills him after he had found out I messed with his business. I know that shit will make him mad as hell. He thought he can shit with me and get away with it, how I would love to see him taking his last breath.

Page | 68

Me: Simi!

She ignored me.

Me: Simi you need to chill, they are bad guys they deserve death

Still silence.

Me: You being childish now.

I stood up to go talk to her face to face woman to woman but my ringing phone made me to stop half way and went to grab it. I cleared my throat before picking up.

Me: Boss

Mabandla: What did you do?

Me: I didn't do anything

Mabandla: What the fuck did you do? What did I say to you?

Another call came through.

Me: Hold on there is another call coming through

Mabandla: I am still fucking ta-

I put him on hold and picked up a call from Craig.

Craig: What did you do Ted?

Me: Why the fuck is everyone asking me that.

Craig: I swear you better pray he makes it or else you are good as dead

Me: What the fuck

Craig: I know where you live Ted.

He said and dropped the call, I started panicking. What the fuck had happen now, is Ride in danger? Did he die? But I didn't go there; I never went to kill Blade. I let Ride handle him like they said he would. I didn't do anything.

TEN

ZINHLE ZUNGU- TEDDY

I was panicking I knew they weren't bluffing, Craig and Mabandla never bluff. I paced up and down trying to make out what I will do. It doesn't matter what I do. They will find me either way but I would rather die trying. I rushed up stairs taking two steps at a time. I knocked on Simi's door but got no response, I knocked again and again till I decided to punch the code and get in.

Page | 69

Me: Simi! Simi!

I checked her in the bathroom with no lucky.

Me: Where the fuck are you Simi

I walked to the balcony where I found her curled on the small couch with tears streaming down her face.

Me: Come on we gotta go.

She ignored me and started rocking herself back and forth while sniffing. I rolled my eye.

Me: Simi I fucking talking to you, get your ass off that couch we leaving.

Still she doesn't say anything.

Me: Fine You want to die then rest in peace I got no time for pity party, it either you get your ass up and leave with me or you stay in this fucking house and die.

I walked out again leaving her behind and rushed to my room where I packed money, ID, gun and a knife then rushed out again while putting on my jacket.

Me: Simi you coming?

I shout passing by her room, she came out walking like a zombie. She didn't even look at me she just went past me. I rolled my eyes and followed after her.

Me: Come on hurry up.

I said rushing towards the back door leading to the garage where I got in my car and waited for Simi who was walking so slowly.

Me: Simi come on we don't have all day.

She ignored me and slowly opened the passenger door before she could even settle down I started the car making her hit her forehead on the windscreen. She gave me a nasty look and didn't say anything. I drove out of the house in a high speed all I could think about is how I am going to get this tracker off my body because with this shit they will find me before I could even blink.

Not far from my house I spotted a car parked on the side of the road which was strange people don't just park beside the road here, my eyes were on the car as I drive off trying to check out the number plate.

Simi: Teddy!

She screams my name so loudly and all I saw before hitting the brakes was a figure.

Me: Oh shit! I killed that person.

She quickly run out, I buried my head on the starring wheel and cursed.

Me: Fucking shit!

I hit it in frustration, the door closed I slowly raised my head to check if the person I just hit is dead or alive.

Simi: You hurt him but he is going to be fine, I just need to treat his leg.

She had a dog on her lap covered in blood and was busy brushing it gentle.

Me: What the fuck! A dog, a dog a fucking dog

Simi: You hurt him

Me: Where are you taking that thing, just leave it to die here.

She gave me a nasty look; I rolled my eyes and raised my hand in surrender then started the car and drove off. Between you and me, I didn't know where I was going or how the fuck I will get this tracker. Along the way while stressed as hell Simi was busy nursing the dog making sure it doesn't bleed to death.

Me: You pretty good with that

I said after a while of silence.

Simi: I did nursing but drop out due to financial issues.

Me: Umm

We went on with driving in complete silence with the dog busy making those small hurt sounds.

We drove for about eight hours and I was so damn tired I parked by an old B&B where we booked in for a night even though I wasn't down for it since well I still had the tracker. Simi asked for a first aid kit to treat the dog. We retired to the room we had booked; she was busy treating the dog when I got a perfect idea.

Me: Simi I need you to do something for me.

She looked at me then back to her dog.

Simi: You going to be fine boy, you going to be fine.

She said brushing it gentle.

Me: I need you to cut the back of my neck and take out the small flashing light you will get there.

Simi: What?

I walked towards her and held her hand.

Me: Please as long as I still got this thing they will find us and they will kill us.

Simi: Who are you talking about? The man who traffic girls?

Me: I messed up with very dangerous men and they are coming for me I need to get this off me or else it the end of me.

Simi: Why would I help you, I just realised you are bad, you are heartless, you are exactly like him and I don't want to associate myself with you.

Me: You do know we will both die if they catch me.

Simi: I don't care I might as well die, I have nothing to live for my mother is just a hoe who take orders from a man who tried to rape me more than once so I don't care about my life the only person I was living for is dead anyway.

She said walking to the bathroom. I took a deep sigh and rub my face in frustration. She came back shortly.

Me: I am also alone I have no one it all me, and I don't want to die not yet please Simi remember I helped you once, I saved you from being sold and made a sex slave.

She took a very deep breath before turning to me.

Simi: If I help you with that thing of yours will you tell me everything that is happening.

Me: No! No it too risky.

Simi: Then I can't help you.

I groaned.

Me: Okay fine, I will tell you

Simi: Promise

I rolled my eyes.

Me: Just get this shit out.

She gave me a nod and took the first aid.

Simi: Okay what do I do?

I took off my jacket and was left with just a vest; I tied my hair into a bun.

Me: See that butterfly tattoo on my neck if you look closely there is a stich there I want you to cut it open and take out the tracker.

Simi: What are you sure? That going to hurt like shit

Me: Just take the fucking tracker out and put it on that dog of yours.

Simi: You insane.

Me: Just do it.

I snap.

Simi: Okay fine

By the time she was done stitching me up I felt like dying. We even went to buy some booze at a bar not far from the B&B then went back to our room to numb the pain with alcohol and beside Simi were on my neck wanting to know who I messed up with? And why I am on the run well since she successfully

removed the tracker on my neck and put it on her dog I might as well tell her half of the story.

Me: We can't be here any longer Craig is smart he will find me.

Simi: But you promised to tell me everything

Me: And I will tell you everything on the road and we leaving the dog behind

Simi: No way that my dog

Me: The dog with a tracker that can lead back to me, no thanks love.

She groaned.

Simi: Okay fine we will leave it to that creepy owner.

Me: Very well

Simi: But you will tell me everything

Me: Simi!

I said rolling my eyes and grabbing my bag.

Simi: You promised

Me: I wish I didn't

I mumbled taking a piece of paper and a pen.

Simi: What are you writing?

Me: A note for the creepy owner. "Take care of my dog I will come and get her after a month. If I find her dead be dead too"

I read the note to her.

Simi: It a him

Me: Whatever.

I took 20k from my money and put it next to the dog.

Simi: You going to leave him all that cash.

Me: There is a lot where that came from and beside we going to sell the car and get more money

Simi: What? Then we will travel with what?

Me: They will track it, come on we gotta go.

She put a blanket around the dog and brushed it one more time.

Simi: Be a good boy and I will come back for you

Me: Simi come on

I grab my bag and walked out; she followed after me all the way to the car.

Simi: Come on tell me already.

Me: My neck hurt so badly

I said grabbing a bottle of vodka we had bought.

Simi: No let me drive

Me: Can you drive?

Simi: Yes but I don't have a driver's license in case we come across police.

I shift from the driver's seat. I took a very long sip of the vodka and lay back on the chair.

Me: If you see a pharmacy please stop I need buy painkillers.

Simi: Cool now talk please, I am so curious.

I took a very long sigh.

Me: Long story short, I have been trained to kill.

She start the car and drove off.

Simi: Trained as in trained to murder people.

Me: Yes, by an ex-military man. For me it was more like standing up for those who couldn't stand up for themselves, I went through hell on the hands of someone, I lost everyone I loved and I was just left alone.

For some weird reason I trust Simi enough to a point where I feel like telling her everything well not everything but off loading a little.

Simi: Who was that? Your neighbourhood witch?

I chuckled while taking another sip of my vodka; it was kicking in as I felt dizzy a little.

Me: Nop let just say it someone who took advantage of us. So my sister's husband hooked me up with this former hot military guy, when I first saw him I really thought he was the most handsome guy, so perfect, funny yet scary and so damn heartless not to mention he is happily married.

I took another long sip.

Me: So I was trained, it wasn't easy but was worth it. Problems started after I killed my childhood friend who betrayed me, after that I failed to kill someone I was assigned too, he violated me so I made a vow to haunt him down and mess up with his life in the most possible way. Along the way of haunting him I lost control of things, I let range and hatred for him get the better of me, I disobeyed the man who gave me a chance to be something, I might or might not have got my friend killed and if he is dead I am as good as dead.

Simi: I don't follow

Me: The less you know the better

Simi: But come on

Me: Simi these people are very dangerous if we make it out alive today then we will have to thank our luck stars.

The alcohol was really starting to play it part. She went quiet for a little while; I lay back and closed my eyes.

Simi: Ted

Me: Umm

Simi: Are you scared.

Me: Of Mabandla yes very ...very scared and Blade ...

I took a sigh.

Me: Well I no longer got the crew to back me up so anything can happen.
I slowly opened my eyes and stare outside the window on my head I am like
“What have you done Ted, what next now? How will you survive on the run?”
I took a deep sigh, when I check the window screen I noticed a car following us,
I quickly jump up and turned to check it out.

Simi: What? Is everything okay?

Me: Oh fucking shit we being followed

Simi: What? Are you sure? Are you sure, oh God we going to die

She said panicking. I quickly fable through my back pack and came out with a
gun

Me: I saw that car not far from my house before we left, we being followed.

Simi: Who? Is it Blade? Mabandla? Which one of them?

Me: I don't know, just drive.

I snap

ELEVEN

BLADE

The moment their car started speeding up I just knew they have noticed I am
tailing them. The chase I am so going to enjoy this ride.

Me: Game on amour, game on.

I hit my car as I drove after them, a gun shot went off almost blowing my head
if I didn't go down.

Me: Damn nice shot amour, very nice.

I drove faster then knocked off their car at the back, the lady driving lost
control just a little and a gun shot went off and hit my windscreen. I knocked
their car again and drove past them then hit it from the side knocking it out of
the road.

Me: Take that amour.

I said with a smirk as I hit it one more time completely knocking it off the road and the driver lost control. It spring off and hit a tree so hard, I hit the brakes and got off the car then walked towards their car. They had hit their heads hard leading to them pacing out. I took amour out first and put her in the boot of my car then the other lady followed, she made a sound as she moves her hand to touch her head.

“Ouch my head, my head”

She said as I pick her up.

“Let me g-“

I punch her hard and she passed out again I threw her in the boot and got in the car then drove off to the club, where I got one guard to help me take them inside all the way to the underground rooms. We tied them on the chairs then went to sleep.

I had a really long exhausting night so I needed some rest.

LUMKA

Lwandle kept nagging me about finding Ted and offering her money to marry me according to Lwandle there was no way Ted would decline the money but deep down I knew she was going to decline it and call us out of our bullshit, Ted doesn't play. The moment I walked inside the house from work she came towards me running.

Lwandle: Everything is ready Mabona is ready to find your soul mate.

She said sing.

Me: Oh God no

Lwandle: Come on

She nag

Me: I need to bath first, freshen up then eat.

Lwandle: Ahh we have to do it now.

Me: Lwandle I said I will do it after I am done so back off

I walked past her as she groaned. I walked to my room where I took a quick shower changed to casuals and went to make a snack to eat then walked to Lwandle who was sitting in lounge busy paging a magazine.

Lwandle: You sure did took your sweet time.

Me: Are we doing this or what

She jump off the couch and led the way to Mabona's room.

Lwandle: This is going to work I can feel it on my bones.

She said cheerfully. I rolled my eyes.

Me: It better be, I have to go home this weekend and it would be better if I go home with good news.

Lwandle: Stress no more, your little sister will sort this whole thing out and you will live happily ever after with your woman. Page | 76

She said that and knocked on Mabona's door.

Me: You watch too much movies there is no such thing as happily ever after.

Mabona open, she's barefooted wearing all white.

Mabona: My King and Princess Lwandle, you may come in.

She said as she bows a little. We walked inside the room that used to be a spare room but now it has been turned to something I don't even recognise. The bed has been moved leaving a big space, the dressing table is covered with a white cover, on the floor there is a handmade matt with red and white candles in a form of a circle and in the middle of the candles there is a plate with incense and a printed picture of Ted of which I am the one who provided it.

Mabona: I apologise about the whole transformation of your room my King, I promise to clean up everything

Me: No, no it okay you don't have to apologise.

Mabona: Very well my King. Could you please take your shoes off?

Lwandle and I took the shoes off and slowly walked towards the matt where Mabona instructed us to sit. She crouched down opposite us and started lighting the candle leaving two a white and a red one. From her dress she took out a pocket of raisers and put them inside the candles circle.

Lwandle: What is all this for, don't you use a mirror like thing.

Me: Shhh let her do her Job

She gave me a look then sits still and watched Mabona.

Mabona: Please close your eyes.

She said resting her hands on her thighs and looked up then closed her eyes. We looked at each other.

Mabona: In order for this to work you will have to close your eyes my King.

Lwandle shrugged her shoulders and closed her eyes, I also took a sigh then closed them.

Mabona: Lord of mercy! Lord of evil! Lord of love!

Lwandle: This is weird why she is calling upon the evil.

She whispered.

Me: Shhhh

Mabona: Lord of light, I call upon you I need a spirit to guide me into finding her alive and kicking.

She then went quiet for so long I almost opened my eyes to check if she is still alive.

Mabona: You said her name is Teddy Zungu

I nod my head forgetting we all have our eyes closed.

Me: yes

She went quiet again.

Mabona: You may open your eyes.

We slowly opened our eyes but hers remained closed, the candles were still on except the two. I looked at Lwandle then back to Mabona who slowly opened her eyes that has turned all white, you couldn't see any colour other than white, her hands started shaking.

Mabona: I see blood

She said getting our attention as we watch her with our mouth hang open

Mabona: I see blood.

Her hands shake even more as she looked at them as if they were the ones with blood.

Mabona: Lot of blood, there is lot of blood.

Then her hands moved to her ears.

Mabona: The screams, noo! The screams

She said looking super weird and scary then her eyes slowly went back to normal as all white candles went off leaving only the red with light. She took matches and burns the incenses.

Mabona: She is in danger, lot of danger. Give me your right hand.

I slowly gave her my hand which she took and cut it with a raiser.

Me: Oh Fuck that hurt.

She took my blood and put it on top of Ted's picture.

Lwandle: This right now is getting weirder.

Me: Shhh

Mabona took the picture with my blood and burned it with the incense, the flames went up.

Mabona: Now look at the flames, look carefully and tell me what you see.

I looked at the flames as they go up, focussing on everything with Lwandle bend over to look at the fire I couldn't concentrate.

Mabona: Princess you won't see anything, he is the only one to see.

Lwandle fall back disappointed.

Mabona: I need you to concentrate on the flames

I took a deep sigh and looked at the flames which displayed Ted in a car and drinking, I couldn't see the other person nor could I hear what she was talking

about but judging from her face expression whatever they were talking about was deep, out of the sudden the car spill out of control then the next thing she is tied on some chair. My heart was racing as looked up to Mabona.

Me: What going on?

Mabona: She is in danger, lot of danger and if you really want to see her you will have to help her ASP. Page | 78

Me: What kind of danger? What can I do?

Mabona: She is not who you think she is? She has blood covered her hands but I can't tell you what to do and the heart always wants what it wants.

Me: You are not making sense.

Mabona: She lied to you about everything

Me: What exactly?

Mabona: My King you don't have time, if you want to save her you will have to get moving now or else it will be too late.

Me: Could you stop speaking in rattles and get straight to the point
She handed me matches.

Mabona: If you want to save her, light the white candle now.

Me: Mab-

Mabona: I must warn you saving her might put your life in danger and you will need people to help you but we can discuss after you have light the white candle and awoken the spirit that will guide you to her.

I take the box of matches and held it then turned to Lwandle who has disbelief written all over her face.

Lwandle: Are you sure you want to do this?

Me: She is in danger, I have to protect her.
She nods her head.

Lwandle: As long as I got to meet the woman who has been driving you crazy I took a deepest sigh that I never took then light the candle. The flames died down and the ashes of her picture and incense rose up.

Mabona: May your soul guide us into finding her, May you protect and prevent all the evil that may harm her.

I was freaking out no lie; I just didn't know what was happening and what I was getting myself into. Mabona started praying.

Mabona: Dear heavenly father, I am not a witch nor am I practising dark magic. I just want to summon her family the Mdluli's to help me keep her safe, I want their spirit to guide and look after her till the help I have acquired get to her, may all her ancestors spirit rose to life and fight the evil that may harm their child.

Her eyes went all out again, she started shaking in a very weird disturbing way then there was a wind that blew the candles, and the light in the house went off leaving us in a dark, I backed away looking around as more cold wind hit me.

Lwandle: What is happening?

I could hear fear in her voice.

Me: Lwandle are you okay?

The light came back again and the wind was no more. I looked at Mabona who looked like she was having a seizure as she lay on the floor shaking, I didn't know what to do. Should I wake her up or should I let her be. It wasn't long before she rose up as if nothing ever happened.

Mabona: We have to get moving or else it will be too late.

She said and got up leaving both Lwandle and I looking at each other with our eyes popped out, we sure do feel like we just saw a ghost or we just saw a ghost. I am not sure

TWELVE

ZINHLE ZUNGU- TEDDY

I slowly opened my eyes, my head hurt like hell and I was fucking tied on the chair. I had a mother of headache. I looked around and just knew it Blade, for some weird reason I was relieved it Blade and not Mabandla. I looked beside me where Simi was also tied on the chair.

Me: Fuck!

I cursed closing and opening my eyes again, my neck hurt so badly I couldn't even move it around the way I pleases.

Me: Simi!

I call out for her

Me: Simi

Still she didn't respond she was bleeding on her head. I tried to move with a chair almost knocking myself over then I use my foot to kick her chair. She slowly opened her eyes.

Simi: Oh my God, oh my God

She said panicking and trying to untie herself

Simi: Oh God we going to die, we going to die.

I rolled my eyes; I really hate this shit, being captured by Blade again, history repeating itself.

Me: Relax will you

Simi: How do you expect me to relax, we going to die? Oh God we going to die.

Me: Simi we won't die, at least you won't die I will make sure of that, and if I manage to get you out of here you can go and live in my house.

She looked at me with tears streaming down her face.

Simi: What? How about you?

Me: I can take care of myself and if it happens you make it out there is money in my room it should last you for few months after that you will see what you do.

Simi: Don't talk like that, don't talk like you dying.

Me: Simi I might not make it, and you don't have to worry about me I am a big girl I can take care of myself. I just want you to promise me you will be safe.

Simi: Ted

Me: I got you into this shit and I should've known better not to drag you therefore I will help you; I will make sure you get out of here with no scratch, I promise.

“If I were you I wouldn’t make promises I won’t keep”

He said getting in. I chuckled bitter.

Me: This is becoming boring, don’t you think?

Blade: Sorry amour I will have to disagree with you on that one

I rolled my eyes

Me: You capturing me, tying me on this very same chair, same room, my people calling to get me, and you raping me then returning me back to my people, so predictable same shit over and over

He smirks and leans on the wall looking at me.

Blade: You are smart amour and you make my life very interesting, well you are quite right though expect the part where I return you back to your so called people this time I am in charge I call the shot.

I know damn well he is in charge but I won’t give him that satisfaction

Me: Oh dream on buddy, dream on

He smirks again then turned his attention to Simi who was ready to shit her pants.

Blade: I see you got yourself a puppet I must say you and your puppet are hard to find.

Me: And I must say you are like a dog chasing a bone.

He walked towards us.

Him: Well if the bone keeps popping on my business I might as well become the dog

Me: The thing is you are a toothless dog, all bark and no action.

He just looked at me and Simi without saying anything

Simi: Sir please ...don’t kill me ...don’t kill us

I rolled my eyes.

Me: Shut up

Simi: No you shut up, you keep provoking this man forgetting we the ones tied on the chair waiting for our death.

Blade: I like how you think my lady

He said looking at Simi

Me: I got this, shut up.

I said through my teeth.

Simi: You got shit Teddy, I don’t want to die. Oh my God I can’t die

She said crying. There was a knock on the door, these knocks once saved my life.

Him: Puppet

He said and walked towards the door.

“Sir one of the guys who got injured during the shootout has woken up in hospital and from the look of things he might sing”

Blade: Has anyone visited him yet

“Not yet sir”

Blade: Where is Shane?

“He is up stairs sir”

Blade: Call for him

“Yes sir”

He then closed the door and turned to us.

Blade: Well I am not much of a talker but you should know I always get what I want, like always and right now I want you to tell me who is out to get me.

Me: Me

Blade: Oh and you did sabotage my business, which I didn't like and for that you will pay.

The door opened before I had a smartass reply, his brother walked in.

Him: You called for me.

This time he was dressed in jeans and a t-shirt.

Him: Oh it this bitch again, you fucking broke my balls you know.

Simi was busy wailing silence beside me.

Me: And I will happily do it again.

Blade: Shane let talk.

He walked out and the Shane guy gave me a nasty look before he followed after him.

I took a deep sigh.

Me: Things ain't looking good at all.

Simi: Oh God we going to die

Me: No we won't

I said trying to convince her, Blade wants me I am sure we can strike a deal where he will let go of Simi and deal with me.

LUMKA

I had called my father for help on saving Ted, he did some calls and I got about eight men to help me out. Mabona said she will try her best to make sure we are safe using her herbs and well that got us steaming and being cut with a razor. She did all sort of weird things to us as protection and we had some weird spirit guiding us to where Ted is being kept. Honestly I am not so sure about this considering the fact and unanswered questions that Ted is not who I think she is, who is Ted? The blood on her hands, what the story behind that?

I looked at my reflection on the mirror and took a deep sigh, what am I getting myself into for a woman, I can have any woman I want yet the one woman I want doesn't want me back and look at me going all the way out making a fool out of myself.

The door open and Lwandle walked in.

Lwandle: Maybe you shouldn't do this; I mean what if you don't make it? I don't want you to die; Mabona said it dangerous.

I took a sigh.

Me: I can do this, I have to do this little sister and maybe if I save her life she will realise that I am deep in love with her.

Lwandle: Then she won't make you pay for marrying you

Me: Exactly

Lwandle: She will be so grateful to you in a way that she will be willing to do anything for you.

She said pacing beside me in deep thought.

Lwandle: Then we can all go home this weekend; you introduce her to the family then boom the royal wedding I have been waiting for happen.

She kept on pacing up and down.

Lwandle: On your speech you can kindly thank me in front of everyone, telling everyone I am the best sister and you wouldn't trade me for anything.

She smiles to herself.

Lwandle: Daddy will be so happy to know you got the wife and you can finally take over as the King

She kept on smiling.

Lwandle: Mom and Daddy will be so happy.

She turned to me.

Lwandle: You can do this Bhuti, I trust you. You got this.

I shake my head and wrap her in a tight hug.

Me: I got this little sister, I got this.

I left my house with the guys and Mabona who was driving, she said she knows where she was going and I hope she does because the last thing I want is getting lost and end up not saving Ted.

MABANDLA

I had called Craig to come to my office, it time I deal with Ted; she is getting out of control.

Craig: Boss you called for me

Me: Where is Teddy Bear?

Craig: The last time I checked she was in some B&B just outside Durban

Me: Doing what there?

Craig: I am not sure let me check where she is now.

He took out his tablet and checked it for a little while.

Craig: She is still there

Me: I am going to get her, she need to be punished she has been doing as she pleases

Craig: I am coming with you Ted put Ride's life in danger; he might not even make it at the hospital

Me: Ok let me call Nkosi

Craig: Sure Boss

He walked out and I grab my phone to call my brother.

Nkosi: Mabandla

Me: Sure I am going to get Ted since she didn't come here herself

Nkosi: She sure does need to be put in her place

Me: I know

Nkosi: Put a bullet on her skull once and for all.

Me: Oh come on

Nkosi: She's becoming a liability

Me: I know

Nkosi: Then end her save us some unnecessary problems

Me: Okay fine

Nkosi: If you don't just know I will kill her myself we already got Blade haunting us we don't need her leaving shit that may lead to us behind.

Me: I got this okay

Nkosi: Better be I gotta go I'm taking Princess to the spelling Bee competition.

I chuckled, seeing the fatherly side of him is so amazing.

Me: She is going to kick butt

Nkosi: She is so excited bra

Me: Tell her I said she must break a leg

He laughed.

Nkosi: I am sure she will say "Should I literally break my leg daddy"

He said sounding exactly like her, I burst into laughter.

Me: You sound exactly like her.

Nkosi: Fuck off

He drops the call leaving me laughing my ass off while shaking my head.

Craig and I drove to the B&B where Ted was, it took us seven hours to get there. We quickly got off the car and went straight to the receptionist where her tracker was flashing; we walked in startling the white old guy.

“Can I help you gentlemen?”

Me: We looking for Ted

“Sorry who?”

Craig: She is here

He said checking his phone.

Me: Tell her to come out

Craig Jump over the counter and looked under it

“Sorry what going on here I am calling police”

Craig: She is not here Boss

Me: What

He came out from under the counter with a dog

Craig: Her tracker led me to this

Me: A dog?

I asked shocked

Craig: She took out her tracker and put it in a dog then left it here.

Me: Shit!

She is smart I give her that, had she took out her tracker and threw it. It was going to stop flashing and we would’ve known she took it off. The tracker needs blood in order to keep on flashing.

Craig: Fuck!

Me: She’s becoming a problem; we can’t have her out there she knows a lot.

I said walking out, now with no doubt where ever I find her I will blow her brains.

THIRTEEN

ZINHLE ZUNGU – TEDDY

Blade left and never came back; it has been about thirty minutes since he had left. Simi and I are trying to untie ourselves. We had moved the chairs together, my back is on her back and she is untying me then I will untie her and we will make a plan to leave this room.

Me: Come on Simi faster

The rope is cutting deep on my skin but I don't care as long as she gets this rope off me.

Simi: I can't see and it difficult with my hands tied

She said taking a deep breath. I groaned in frustration.

Simi: Do you think you can stand up, I will use my teeth.

Me: Okay let me try

I move the chair from her and tried to stand up, she shifts her chair and tried to untie me, standing with a chair was difficult since my legs were also tied.

Me: Come on it hurt

She didn't respond she just kept on trying to untie me.

Me: Simi

Simi: I am almost there

Me: Hurry before he comes back

She kept on using her teeth hurting me with them, even my legs were slowly giving in.

Me: Si-

Simi: Yes! Yes

She cheered happily; I settled the chair back and took a deep breath before getting the rope off me and untying my legs.

Simi: We did it, we did it. Oh God thank you, we did it.

Me: We have to hurry before he comes back

Simi: Untie me

I finished untying my legs and untie Simi.

Me: Simi follow my lead okay.

She nods her head and wiped off her tears.

Me: We getting out of here

Simi: I am scared Ted

Me: Don't worry I got this, I will check if the door in locked.

I slowly walked towards the door praying it unlocked, I held the handle and opened it.

Me: Yes

I whispered and gave her a thumps up. She took a deep breath and followed me as we tip toe out before we step out in an open I looked around and the hallway was empty.

Me: Come

We both tip toe out of the room and all the way towards the elevator passing by the rooms with closed doors. The elevator counted down as we got near meaning someone was in there and the elevator was going to open anytime now and we were going to get caught.

Me: Oh shit, someone is coming

Simi: Oh my God what should we do?

I tried opening the door that we were leaning on but it was locked.

Me: Move to the other door

She quickly moved to the other door, the moment she opened it the elevator door's opened. I signal for her to get in. she quickly got in and closed the door, I turned my attention to the elevator.

“What the fuck”

I let out a deep sigh, it his brother and not him.

Him: Who untied you?

He said coming towards me.

Him: Where is the other bitch?

He tried to slap me but I ducked his slap and kicked him on the ribs.

Him: are you fucking fighting me.

Me: You should let me go I know you the one who wants him dead.

He chuckled and took out his gun.

Him: And you have failed more than once to kill him, more reasons for you to die, you know too much.

He pointed the gun at me. I didn't even think twice or gave him a chance to use the gun. I kicked his hand the one with the gun he pulled the trigger and the gun went off and shoot the wall then fell on the floor, in a blink of an eye I was on him punching him. He pushed me and I hit the wall with my head, he charged towards me and held my neck choking me while he pressed me on the wall.

Him: You fucking got balls

I tried getting his grip off my neck but he just tightens them, I close my eyes and tried to gather some strength. I kicked him on his dick not too hard the way I would've wanted but hard enough for him to let go of my neck and bend over holding his balls I also fall on the ground and held my neck while coughing.

Him: Fucking shit!

He cursed, I kicked him on his ass making him fall face flat on the floor, he tried to reach for a gun but I was quick to kick it out of his reach, he held my legs making me fall on the floor, I kicked and kicked. He took my knife from my boot and stabs my thigh.

Me: Aaah

I screamed and kicked him on the face with my other leg. He groaned and lay with his back breathing heavy; I tried to stand up the pain on my thigh felt like I was literally dying, I had to get the knife off my thigh and honestly this shit hurt more than a gun wound. He tried moving and standing up but I kicked him with

my stabbed leg, the pain I was feeling was worse than any physical pain I have ever felt but the rush of adrenaline gets me going. I know the pain will hit different after my blood was done pumping. I got on top of him and threw countless punches on his face, when he stopped fighting me I didn't think twice, I didn't even think about the pain I pulled out the knife on my thigh while screaming my lungs out. I stab him on his shoulder with all the strength I had. He screamed as I try to get myself off him, I collapsed beside him.

Me: Simi! Simi!

I called out with my weak voice as I lay with my back, eyes closed, and my hands on my wound and breathing heavy.

Me: Simi!

I heard the sound of the door before I heard her voice.

Simi: Oh my God Ted you hurt

She rushed to me and crotch down. With her shaking hands she took her jacket off, ripped it apart then tied it on my wound.

Me: Oh shit

I said through my clenched teeth

Simi: This should stop the bleeding.

Me: We need to get out of here, we don't have time.

Simi: Yes, yes-

She said panicking.

Simi: Is he still alive

She said looking beside me. he was busy groaning on the floor.

Me: Simi help me up.

Simi: Of course

She helped me up supporting me with her hand; I limp towards the elevator with her still holding me. She pressed the button going up, the doors opened she help me in first then got in and the doors closed, I took a deep sigh and lean on the elevator. The moment the doors opened I knew there would be no way out for us here.

Me: Wait

I said with my hand held up, I limp and poke my head out checking the cost. Half naked girls were walking around, laughter and voices were audible. There was a door written kitchen, I am sure there will be a back door in a kitchen and all we had to do was get there without being caught. I took a deep sigh, it during the day so obvious most of the workers here are not yet in and hopefully the kitchen is empty too.

Me: Simi

She came closer.

Me: See that door, the one at the back

Simi: The kitchen door?

Me: Yes we will use it to escape, we have to be fast.

She took a deep sigh and nods her head. We got out of the elevator and the doors closed, we hid by the corner of the wall as two girls walked past us on this small passenger leading to the club itself.

Me: Simi run for your life and keep the door open for me, if I get caught run for your life don't wait up.

Simi: But Ted how about you?

Me: Simi run for your life do not worry about me, I am sure there is a back door there, used it and get out of here.

Simi: I can't leave you behind

Me: I said fucking run

I said through my teeth as she irritates me even more and the pain on my thigh doing worse. She nods her head, I check the cost again before I instructed her to run to the kitchen door, when she got there she open the door wide for me, I took a deep sigh before I limp run towards the door I fall inside and Simi closed it quickly. Two girls we found there looked at us with their eyes wide open; I really hoped they don't give us any problems, Simi helped me up.

Me: Where is the back door?

One of them pointed the door and I nod my head.

Me: Thank you.

Simi helped me as we limp there, we got out and fresh cold air hit us, the door led us to the parking lot but the parking was in a ground and there were stairs that we had to climb in order to get there.

Simi: Thank you heavenly father we are out, we are out oh yes.

The parking lot is dark, she helped me climb the first stair going down I heard plates breaking inside and scratch of tires in the parking, the door behind us opens. I pushed Simi off me.

Me: Simi run!

I shout for her to run as I turn to look at the person who just opened the door, it him Shane the brother, he has blood oozing out of his shoulder and he sure do look beaten up.

Him: You fucking bitch

He pointed the gun at me, I looked over the stairs if my leg wasn't injured I was going to manage to climb over and jump but with a wounded leg this might be too risky but probably better than being shot by this asshole. I gave him a middle finger and balanced myself with a metal that is attached on the stairs then jump over, gun shots from the parking went off, I hit my head on the ground then it was light out.

LUMKA

We finally got to our destination, the guys had guns and I was the only one with no gun. There is no way in hell I was gonna carry a gun. Mabona is our driver; if something happen to her I will never forgive myself. She is old for heaven sake in her late 40s and she should be home doing her herbs or whatever people her age do.

Page | 90

Mabona: Are you sure you want to go in?

She asked as we approach the parking lot of a club where she said she saw Ted on her visions. I took a deep sigh.

Me: Yes but this is a club.

She closed her eyes.

Mabona: Yes sh-

She was disturbed by a voice I know very well.

“Simi run!”

Me: That her that Ted!

I said getting worked up as some girl ran down the stairs while falling and Ted was up there with some guy, who had a gun pointed at her. Mabona stooped the car so quickly, everything happened so fast the guy tried to shoot Ted but she jump over and the gun went off, he turn the gun to shoot her but the guys I was with were fast to shoot him first. Ted fell and hit her head. I got off the car and run towards her.

Me: Teddy! Teddy!

I called for her as I kneel; next to her, she was really hurt and blood was just oozing out of her head, I doubt she is even still alive. I cried holding on to her, Mabona rushed to us she held her head, and put her fingers on her neck.

Mabona: She is still alive; we need to get her to the hospital as in now.

The girl I assume her name is Simi came towards us.

Her: Is she okay

She said rushing to hold her, the guys picked her up and rushed towards the car with Mabona and the girl following after her.

Me: Who are you?

Simi: I ...I ...is she okay

She said with tears gushing out and limping.

Mabona: You are bleeding on your leg get in we will get you to the hospital.

Her: Never mind my leg I fell I will be fine, I need to make sure Ted is fine, I need to make-

She just jump in the car and started inspecting her. We all got in.

Her: I need a blanket. I need a blanket.

She said with shaking hands and eyes full of tears. Mabona took off her wool jersey and gave it to her. Page | 91

Her: We can't take her to a hospital, they will get to her and they will kill her. We have, we have ...oh my God

Me: Lady put it together, what should we do? She will die, she is not even moving.

Her: Oh my God, oh my God

She kept saying while rocking herself back and forth with her hands on Ted's head and the car moving on a high speed.

Me: Lunga! Lunga

I said as he clicks my mind.

Me: I have a friend who owns a private practise we can take her there.

Her: Okay ...let get her there ...

She said still rocking back and forth and crying, she might be her sister or maybe a friend, honestly I don't know any Ted's relatives. I gave the guy who was now driving directions to Lunga's practise in town while I took my phone out to call him.

FOURTEEN

BLADE

Me: What the fuck happened?

Shane was busy groaning as paramedics were taking him to an ambulance, two of the chefs were standing there holding on to each other. I stop the paramedics from taking Shane, I want answers and I want them now. How could he let her get away? I fucking asked him to do one thing, just one yet he fails.

Me: I want answers and I want them now.

I said looking at the cooking ladies then Shane.

“We don’t know what happened, we just saw two girls running here they used a back door to run and Shane showed up we peek through the door he tried to shoot the other one who was injured but a gun from a parking lot went off and the girl jump off the stairs, everything happened so fast, Shane collapsed on the floor and that other lady hit her head. I think she is dead”

She said so fast with fear written all over her face.

“Then some guy and old woman came and took her then they were gone. That all we saw, I swear we had nothing to with it”

My attention turned to Shane.

Me: You fucking failed to make sure she doesn’t escape, I asked you to do one simple thing making sure they don’t escape but you failed that shit. A very simple shit

He was shot on his stomach, a knife on his shoulder. A knife I know very well. Her knife, she beat the hell out of him.

“Sir we need to rush him to the hospital or else he won’t make it”

One of the paramedics said. Shane had an oxygen mask on.

I was beyond the word pissed and the rage I was feeling inside was just too much. I walked past them all the way to the cctv room.

Me: I need the footage for today, from the underground rooms to the back door of the kitchen leading to the parking.

The security guy gave me a terrified look.

“I have the footage for the underground rooms but I don’t have the footage of the parking”

Me: What the fuck you mean

He started getting the footage for me.

“Mr Shane sir said he will re-install the cameras at the parking but he never did”

Me: You got to be kidding me, what do you get paid for?

“The cameras from the parking have not been working for a while now and I did told Mr Shane to get us new ones but he shut me off and said he will get them”

He said handing me the footage, I snatch it and left the room slamming the door at the process. I got my PC and watch the whole shit that went down, there are no cameras at the kitchen and no footage from the parking now I don't even know who has her, is she dead or alive what better way than to start by checking the hospitals. I must say she did kick Shane's butt, she gave him one hell of a beating.

I snatch my car keys from the table and drove off, I am going to find her even if it the last thing I do I am going to get her, she may run all she likes but she will never hide from me. This time when I find her I will make sure she damn suffers so much for all the fucking trouble she has caused. I drove to the hospital where Shane has been admitted. After parking I went straight to the front desk lady with ugly teeth.

Me: I'm looking for a lady who got admitted today, she has a knife injury on her thigh and she fell and hit her head; her name is Teddy Zungu.

She chews her bubble gum and looked up. My face wasn't a pleasant thing to look at considering the fact that I am mad as hell so she quickly looked back to her computer and started typing.

“Sorry we have no Teddy Zungu on our system, what time was sh-”

I walked away while she was still talking, I walked to their security room where I found two guards, and from my pocket I took out a stash of cash and threw it on their table.

Me: I need today's footage, no questions asked.

They looked at the money then back at me then to each and they went to their computer got me the footage.

“No questions asked”

The other one said handing me the footage, I nod my head and took the footage then drove off. I collected three footages of hospitals around Durban then went back to the club where I watched them all and there were no signs of her.

LUMKA

Lunga did came through for me we are still at his practise, Ted has hit her head pretty hard so she is undergoing a surgery and Lunga said her condition is very critical so the surgery was a must we just waiting to know how the surgery will

go. The Simi girl is busy pacing up and down while talking to herself, she would shake her head and stop pacing, sit on the chair while rocking herself back and forth then stood up and pace up and down, and pull her hair.

Me: Would you stop doing that, you making me dizzy.

She stopped and looked at me.

Simi: Sorry who are you?

Before I could even answer she went on and started babbling.

Simi: Are you Mabandla? Do you work for him? Did he send you to get Ted so God help me I am going to call the police

She paced up and down again leaving me confused as hell.

Simi: You don't look like a Mabandla or a harmful person or I suck at judging people or you are just his boy ...but you would've killed her if you were Mabandla, right? You wouldn't have saved her? Are you her brother? Is that her mother? Who are you people, how do you know Ted? Mabandla won't send an old woman; I am sure he doesn't work with old woman. God I wish I knew how he looks like.

Me: Would you shut up, I am Ted's boyfriend and these are my people. Who's this Mabandla? Is Ted in trouble? Who are you?

She gave me a relieved face before sitting back on the chair and taking a deep breath.

Simi: Oh thank God

Me: What going on here?

Mabona: My Prince this is bigger than you thought.

Simi: We can't keep her here, they will look for her and they will kill.

She said standing up and pacing again.

Simi: We can't keep her here please; we have to get her out of here.

She sure sound like a paranoid person

Simi: We have to get her out of h-

Me: Are you crazy, she is in a matter of life and death and she's still undergoing surgery that she might not survive how the fuck do you think we will get her out of here.

Simi: We can't keep her here!

She shouts

Simi: If we keep her here she is good as dead, do you hear me DEAD she will die.

She said screaming on my ear.

Me: What do you suggest then genius.

She kept pacing up and down while biting on her nails.

It was almost the next morning now and we have been here since yesterday afternoon, the Simi chick has stopped acting crazy, she is just sitting there staring into space, I have consumed more than one mugs of coffee, I'm exhausted and all I want to rest, Mabona is still here but the guys we were with are gone. Finally Lunga showed up looking drained. Simi was the first to rush to him.

Simi: Will she be fine? Is she okay

I also rushed after her.

Me: How did it go?

Lunga: The operation went well.

He took a deep sigh.

Lunga: We are not sure if she will make it as yet she is in a coma

Simi: She will be fine ...she will be fine

She said rubbing her hands together.

Simi: She is a strong girl she will fine be fine, we just need to get her out of here.

Lunga: Sorry what?

Simi: If we don't get her out of here we are all dead, they will look for her and they will kill whoever was involved in this. We can't keep her here and no one should know she was ever here and by that not even on records should you put her name, are we clear?

Lunga: Lumka what going on here?

Me: I wish I knew

Simi: We have to move her as in now and today. We can move her with the bed in the ambulance outside, all the machines still operating and keeping her alive. I honestly don't know how it done but we have to move her or else we are all dead.

Mabona: She is right, she must be moved keeping her here is too risky.

Lunga: Okay now I am confused, Ma Mabona what going on?

Lunga and I are from the same village, we grew up together and we are friends, have been friends since we were kids even though our friendship is no longer like before.

Mabona: There is no time to explain we just have to get her out of here; she can go to the hospital back to our village. I believe she will be safe there.

Simi: Finally someone get it.

Mabona came up to me and looked at me straight at my eyes.

Mabona: They are haunting her and it only a matter of time before she is found. She has made many enemies and they are all out for her blood, you

need to get her out of here she will be safe at the village, no one will know she is there.

I nod my head.

Me: Okay how this going to work?

Simi: As I have said we take the ambulance and we move her simple as that.

Lunga: In her condition it not simple as that

Simi: Then you coming with us to make sure she is fine

Lunga: I can't do that I have a job, a practise to run

Simi: I am not asking you, I am telling you now go and get everything ready before I blow your brains

She said taking out a gun from her sweats pants.

Me: Whoah where did you get that?

Simi: From your car, I didn't trust you people. You get moving

Me: DO you even know how to use it, put that thing away.

Simi: Oh trust me she taught me well how to use it, doctor move.

Lunga: Okay, okay fine

Lunga moved to get Ted ready for the move; the Simi Chick put the gun away and followed after him. As I am sitting on the chair I am asking myself whether I made a right decision by saving Ted. What am I getting myself into? Who are these girls?

FIFTEEN

LUMKA

As planned or rather forced Lunga got Ted ready for leaving, while I drive the ambulance Simi and Lunga were at the back with the Ted. I do not know how I am going to explain this to my parents but I guess I will have to find a way. Mabona was to follow behind us with Lwandle. The drive is long a 5hour drive by the time we got there the sun was already out, I was exhausted and so damn hungry, Lunga got her out of the ambulance and wheeled her inside the hospital on the scratch bed, he had an exclusive room prepared for her since he kind of used the royalty name to get her a special treatment.

Simi: I will also need a place to crash; I am not leaving her behind.

She said staring at me.

Me: You got to be kidding me, you are not my problem.

Lwandle: Bhuti where is she? Is she okay?

Lwandle said rushing to us on the waiting area; she threw herself at me for a hug.

Me: Hey little sis, yes she is okay or I hope she will be okay

Lwandle: Oh thank God, can I see her?

Simi: No, no one is allowed to see her.

Me: What?

Lwandle: Oh ...

Simi: Doctors orders.

She said with a shrug.

Me: Yes lil sis you can see her.

I said giving Simi a nasty look she rolls her eyes.

Simi: You can't just let anyone see her

Lwandle: What going on Bhuti?

I took a sigh.

Me: This is Simi she's Te ...

Simi: I am Ted's sister and she's not well I will prefer if you keep your mouth shut about her whereabouts and don't take pictures of her or post on social media about her.

Lwandle: What the fuck!

Me: What?

Simi: Ted is a wanted; some really bad men want her so I can't risk her life with anything or anyone

Lwandle: Why is she a wanted? Is that why she had to come here?

Simi: Look she crossed some really bad people.

Lwandle turn to look at me for more clarification, my own head is spinning I don't know what going on.

Me: ah ...I I'm tired I am going home I need some rest.

A huge part of me regrets this entire thing.

Simi: I am coming with you, I need rest too, shower and food.

Me: No you not

Simi: I have nowhere to go

Lwandle: Bhuti

She gave me those beautiful pleading eyes.

Me: How the fuck will I explain her to mom and dad

Lwandle: She could stay with Mabona, I am sure she's lonely it would be nice to her to have someone.

She said with her sweetest voice.

Me: Damn you always get me in shit

Simi: Thank you

Lwandle: My name is Lwandle

Simi: You have a beautiful name

They started walking away while chatting leaving me standing.

Lwandle: Thank you Simi, how long you planning on staying?

Simi: Till Ted get better, I can't leave her side

Lwandle: That would be so great; I would love to have you around. We should pass by the mall and get you some few things since it look like you don't have anything with you. It will be my treat.

Wait what? Damn Lwandle and her stupid heart. Growing up she didn't really have a sister or a girlfriends so I think she just want that experience of a sister, more reasons for her wanting me to marry Ted who is almost her age mate.

I had to go with them to the mall since I had no transport back home, they spent almost the whole day shopping, having breakfast and laughing like they have known each other for years. Finally we left I had to talk to Mabona first about Simi staying with her then Lwandle and I left for the palace leaving Simi with Mabona.

SIMI

The Mabona woman is kind hearted, her home has two roundaval she performs her rituals on one of them, the other one was a kitchen and two rooms flat with a lounge and her bed room. She welcomed me in her home

with open hands. I was standing outside checking the place, it rural the deep rural with gravel road, cows, chickens, goat, even horses. Most of the houses are round some even have big houses not far from Mabona's house is the Palace where Lwandle is from, the Palace is big with a huge wall fence, other than the dogs barking from the palace this place look peaceful.

Mabona: It a very beautiful place, unlike the city it not too crowdie or noisy here.

She startles coming from behind me.

Me: I can tell, it beautiful, there is peace.

She smiles

Mabona: I heard the Prince said you will be here for a while

Me: Yes till my sister recover, I can't leave her all alone in this strange place.

Mabona: Umm I see

Me: If it won't be a problem to you, please accommodate me till she recovers

Mabona: I do not mind at all.

Me: Thank you

I said turning to look at her.

Me: I could even find a job just to help out where I can, are there any jobs around here?

Mabona: You can try out at the palace I am sure they can get you something

Me: Thank you I will go there tomorrow

She walked away but stops on her tracks and looked back at me

Mabona: If anyone asks you tell them you are my sister's kid Nomthandazo you just came to visit me.

I smile politely.

Me: Thank you so much for everything.

Mabona: Come and rest you must be tired

I took a very deep sigh.

Me: Yes I am very tired indeed.

I followed her back inside she let me used her bed for today only since I told her I will be sleeping on her small old worn-out couch.

The next day I was up early, I am natural an early bird Mabona was already up singing outside, the house was clean I woke up and cleaned the bed then washed my face, Lwandle was kind enough to buy me toiletries and some few dresses she said she will give me some dresses today.

Mabona: You up early

She said when I walked to the kitchen where she was, cooking some weird smelling herb.

Me: I always wake up early

Mabona: Okay I was about to go to the river, you can prepare breakfast in the mean time

Me: No I will go to the river, you prepare breakfast

Mabona: Are you sure? You city girls don't like fetching water.

Me: I don't mind, I use to visit my granny at the rural we fetched water there

Mabona: Okay, let me direct you to the river then

We both took buckets and left for the river, the river is called ifafa it has flowing tasty water, there were some few ladies, and Mabona was busy talking with them while I filled out bucket with water.

Later that day I went to visit Ted at the hospital, nothing has changed she's still unconscious, I spent a day there just sitting starring at her peacefully sleep. I am scared; I don't know what would happen if any of these men find her, she's like a sister now. I feel like a lost a sister and gained another sister.

BLADE

Amour is smart very smart, she just disappeared on thin earth, my two witness said she fell and hit her head my guess was she is probably dead but for the past two weeks since her escape I have been going through mortuaries trying to find her with no luck, there is no sign of her; nothing. I must admit she played me, she played me pretty well I have a feeling she's still out the alive and kicking and I won't rest till I find her. I have to find her.

"Sir your brother is here"

Me: What?

Ever since Shane messed up I forced him to rehab to get clean, I am shocked he out already.

"Should I let him in?"

I have taken over all my businesses in Durban since he proved to be not capable of handling anything. I nod my head.

He walked in looking like hell, so tinny like he hasn't eaten in years.

Me: What the fuck you doing here?

Him: I no longer want to be there and you fucking can't tell me what to do I stood up from the chair and walked to him.

Me: How did you escape at the rehab?

Him: I walked out

He said and sat on the chair

Me: You need to clean your act

Him: Fuck you!

I slap him hard across the face.

Him: What was that for?

Me: you ran from the rehab then I will clean you myself.

I drag him out of my office all the way to the room I had Amour kept, he was busy cursing me but too weak to fight me.

Him: You fucking mother's cunt, let me fucking go.

I opened the door and threw him inside.

Me: You only gonna come out of that room when you are clean.

Him: Go fuck yourself

I slam the door shut and locked it then walked away.

SIXTEEN

ZINHLE ZUNGU – TEDDY

ONE MONTH LATER

I am standing naked my hands are tied on a ceiling, my pussy is busy itching and so damn wet. I'm trying to smooth the itching by squeezing my thighs together but it not helping I need him to touch me down there, I need him to easy the itching but there he is sitting on a chair opposite me just admiring me, his eyes are fixed on every part of my body, roaming up and down, his breathing would hitch every now and then. Instead of me being shy I am enjoying every part of his intense stare, his pretty brown eyes lock with mine, he bit his lip.

Me: Touch me

I said pleading; he's wearing only his boxer short, the dick print so visible.

He takes a deep breath and moved his eyes from mine they roam down my body to between my thighs, I could feel the wetness dripping, I am so turned on by the fact that I can't touch myself, and that he is watching me like I am his last meal for a day. He stare between my legs, fucking me with his eyes, I squeezed my thighs even more hard, his hand moved to his cock, I closed my eyes and tried to imagine it deep inside me fucking me hard showing no mercy, with my imagination I could feel it deep inside me pocking my womb; damn I would be so nice to have his big thick long cock filling me. I let out a slow soft moan and that all it took for cum to drip down my thighs, I came so hard with no touch just his intense stares and my wild imagination. I slowly opened my eyes to look at him but was greeted by a too bright light and beeping sound. I closed my eyes shut again and opened them, I'm no longer tied, I'm laying on a bed, there is a lady sitting beside me busy on her phone, my throat is too dry I can't even talk, I tried to water it with saliva but it did me no justice just when I was about to move my hand the door opened a guy walked in.

"Teddy!"

He said half shouting, the girl looked up when she realised I was up she rushed to touch my face.

“Oh my God Teddy”

She said touching my face and hugging me.

Me: Water please

I manage to say in a whisper and scratch voice.

“Don’t just stand there, go get the doctor and some water”

The girl said to the guy who has been standing by the door staring at me, he runs out and shortly came back with a doctor and a glass of water, the doctor help me drink water. Then I took a deep breath and closed my eyes then opened them again.

Doctor: Miss Zungu do you know where you are?

I looked around all the machines connected to me busy beeping then back to the doctor.

Me: Hospital

Doctor: Good, do you know why?

He asked while jotting down something. I tried to think but I couldn’t remember anything.

Doctor: What is your name?

The doctor asked again when I took long to answer his previous question and again I couldn’t remember a thing. What is my name? Wait he called Miss Zungu, I am a Zungu but what is my name? The doctor flashes a light on my eyes.

Doctor: Can you tell me your name?

Me: I ... I don’t remember

I said in a whisper. He turned to look at the girl and the guy standing by the bed watching me.

Doctor: Do you know who these people are?

I looked at the girl and a guy for a minutes, I have never seen them before.

Me: Sorry who are you?

“Doctor what the fuck is going on”

The girl asked.

Doctor: She’s suffering from amnesia, considering the fact that she hit her head it is to be expected.

“Does that mean she doesn’t remember anything?”

The guy asked.

Doctor: Well yes, and there is a slight chance that her memory might come back

“Meaning she might lost it permanently?”

Doctor: Yes she might, but it also might come back little by little, maybe after years

Me: What?

Doctor: Your name is Teddy Zungu you were admitted here after you fell and hit your head.

Me: I hit my head?

“Yes you roll down the stairs and hit your head”

The guy answered

Me: how long have I been here?

I asked kind of freaked out, am I the drinking type. Probably why I rolled down the stairs and fell.

“Umm one month, two weeks”

The girl said squeezing my hand.

Doctor: I will leave you to catch up, just don't feed her with any information it might mess up her recovering progress.

They nod, the doctor checked my bed covers, and I felt the coldness of something wet. I looked down in embarrassment trying to avoid the doctor's eyes.

Doctor: I will get a nurse

He said giving me a nod and walked out, I sigh in relief glad that he didn't announce to everyone that I just peed on the covers.

“Hi Ted”

The girl said the moment the doctor step out. I cleared my throat.

Me: Hi sorry you are?

“I am Simi, your sister”

I smile at her, I have a sister she's pretty.

Simi: This is Lumka

Lumka: I am your fiancé

He said giving my sister a look I didn't quit get.

Me: I ... I have a fiancé

Lumka: Yes my love, we were about to get married even the date was set

Me: Wow

Simi: and you two loved each other so much

She said rolling her eyes, I don't know if it just me but I sensed sarcasm in her statement. I turned my attention to my fiancé; he looks nothing like a man in my dream with brown beautiful eyes.

Lumka: We will leave you to rest love, will to check on you later

He said and kissed my forehead.

Lumka: Lwandle will be so happy you are up

I wonder who is Lwandle, maybe it my kid

Me: Do I have a kid

He smiles

Lumka: Not yet, but soon

Me: I'm pregnant?

I asked with my eyes popped out as I touch my flat stomach, he laughed.

Lumka: Not yet baby, I love you

He said smiling then left; my sister attacked me with a hug.

Simi: I am so glad you okay, you scared me Ted

Me: Were we close?

Simi: Very close we did everything together, got naught together.

Me: Have I ever dated a guy with brown eyes, a neat haircut and tattoos?

Simi: No it has always been Lumka, he is royalty you two were about to get married so he would take over the throne

Me: Wow

The nurse walked in and greeted.

Simi: I will leave you for now, see you later babes

She kissed my chick and walked out; I took a deep sigh and closed my eyes trying to collect my thought.

SEVENTEEN

ZINHLE ZUNGU –TEDDY

I not sure where I am or who I am, yesterday Simi and Lumka didn't come back to visit me as promised. I am tired on the hospital I just want to get out and the doctor said I can only be discharged probably tomorrow; they still have to monitor me in case of any massive headaches but honestly I just wanna leave this depressing place.

Knock

They walked in after knocking; Simi, Lumka and some other two ladies I didn't know. Simi walked up to me while the other girl looked at me with beautiful puppet eyes and a huge smile.

Simi: Hey babes, how you feeling?

Me: Stuck

It an honesty truth, I feel stuck like I can't do anything.

Simi: Don't worry you will be getting out of here very soon

Me: Wish soon can be now

I said with a sigh.

"Oh my God I am so glad you are finally up and you look even more beautiful now that you are up"

Me: Am I an ugly sleeper

They laughed

Lumka: No you are an adorable sleeper.

I blushed a little, the girl walked up to me.

"I'm Lwandle, Lumka's sister"

Me: Good to meet you Lwandle

Lwandle: I am so happy you're up, I can finally plan a wedding gosh I am so excited

Lumka: Lwandle

He said in a warning tone.

The other old lady was just standing there looking at me, our eyes locked and no one said anything.

Simi cleared her throat.

Simi: This is our mother, we call her Mabona though.

She chuckles awkwardly.

Simi: It feels so weird to introduce you to your mother

My so called mother and I looked at each other weirdly; I didn't even feel a connection indicating she's mother, now I am wondering were we even close?

Mabona: Teddy

She said not even moving to hug me

Me: Mabona

I wondered why she's called Mabona.

Me: Why we call her that?

I directed the question to Simi.'

Simi: She's a seer

Me: Uhh ...do I have a brother or any other sister

Simi: Nop it just me and you

Me: Umm

Lumka: I can't wait to make you my wife

He said smiling

Lwandle: I have already planned the weeding, just a little bit of touch ups to be done after that all is done.

Simi: Girl you move fast, already planned

She said with her eyes rolled.'

Lwandle: Told you I couldn't wait and beside I had all the time in the world.

They chilled for a while, talking among themselves, involving me every now and then.

Lumka: Ok I will need you to leave me and my wife alone now

Them: Wuuuh

Lwandle: Okay that how it is now

Mabona hadn't said much ever since she got here, even now she is the first to get up and leave the others followed after her. He turned to me

Lumka: So how you feeling?

Me: Okay I guess

He settled on a chair.

Lumka: If you need anything just let me know okay baby

I nod my head.

Me: Thank you, that means a lot.

He took my hand in his.

Lumka: I am so happy you are up

He said and kissed my hand.

Lumka: I thought I would lose you forever

I fake a smile.

Me: I am glad I woke up with you here.

I wasn't sure about who I am as yet so what I just told Lumka is a lie wrapped in truth, I'm glad I had people who were always there by my side when I was unconscious.

MABANDLA

I was in my office at NV doing some paper work, I fucking hate this but if I want to be seem legit I have no choice but to keep up. I am sleepy I kept yawning, that what this paper work thing does to me, it makes me so sleepy.

Me: Fuck this shit!

I lay back on the chair and closed my eyes, there were gun shots I am not sure if I am dreaming of there are really gun shot. My phone ringing made me jump up.

Me: What

There are really gun shot outside, I rushed to a window to peak while answering the phone.

Craig: Sir we are being attacked

Me: What the fuck? By who?

Not even waiting for an answer I dropped the call and rushed back to my office cabinet and got my bullet proof jacket, with my guns. I sneak out of my office and hid by the building. There were four cars by the gate, that where the gun shot were coming from and that only means one thing our hide out has been found. I fired my shot, hitting one of their guys on the shoulder. Some of their shot turn from my guys to me, I lay with my stomach on the ground as they fire more shot. The shot kept coming nonstop, when they finally stopped I rose up and fired my shot while running towards my guys, they covered me while I run to them.

"Boss cover me"

One of the guys said.

Me: In three

I counted in three before I fired more shot, my guy run towards the gate but they shot him right on his head.

Me: Fuck! Who are these people?

We had hid in a camp; a camp is a place with just a roof and poles so we had only those poles to hide

"Oh shit! They threw a grenade, ruuun!"

We all run to either side just when the grenade explodes , the steam of the flames pushed me hard and I fell next to the car parking, I blanked out for a

moment before I woke up and hid behind the truck. My leg hurt, I am breathing heavy. I took few deep breaths before firing more gun shot.

BLADE

“Let abort!”

I roar through the walkie-talkie we were using, most of my guys have died at least the message has been sent, I am coming for each and every one at the NV security so they better brace themselves. I backed away slowly and got my car while still firing gun shots as they also were fired my way, some of the guys got in and we drove off.

“We should’ve finished them off boss”

The guys I had in total were 20 but now there is only 4 of us the rest are either dead or just shot.

Me: Don’t worry; they are going to come to us

“Exactly more reasons why we should’ve finished them”

Me: We were not going to finish them and when they come to us they would be coming to the slaughter house, they will find us armed and ready for war.

“Damn!”

He screamed in frustration.

Me: I still want their boss alive and kicking

I drove off faster as some of the guys groans in frustrations and rush of adrenaline.

When we got back to one of my warehouse Shane ran to me.

Shane: Where the fucks were you?

He is out of my home rehab and he’s clean now or I hope he’s screen.

Me: We were on a war

Shane: What war?

Me: None of your fucking business

I walked past him to inside the warehouse, he followed after me.

Me: Why are you following me around?

Shane: You were not at the club and I was told you bought lot of weapons last week.

Me: So what

I turned to look at him

Shane: What the fuck going on? Are you in trouble?

Me: No

Shane: Then what the fuck man

Me: Nothing

I said then turned and walked away. Till I know who fucking tried to kill me I am not going to trust anyone not even my cousin Shane.

EIGHTEEN

ZINHLE ZUNGU – TEDDY

I was being discharged today, Lumka has come to pick me up, he has a driver we both sit at the back of his car, and apparently I will be staying with his family. The car drove off, he held my hand as it drives off, my focus was on the window in the deepest of my lost memory I didn't recognise this place nothing about it seemed familiar finally the car drove to this huge gate, Lumka's house came into view. A huge double story with few round hut around their yard, it so beautiful so dam amazing. I couldn't wait to view it inside.

Me: OH my god, you have a beautiful home.

He smiles sweetly at me before kissing my cheek. The car came to a stop in front of the double story house, he got off and came to my side, opened the door for me and helps me out, I was limping due to a wound on my thigh. I hang my arm around him and he helped me limp inside the house.

Him: I could just lift you up you know

I chuckled

Me: Please don't

Him: Why not?

He asked amused

Me: I am scared you will drop me.

He laughed.

Him: Oh please you are not that heavy

Me: Haibo Bhuti have you seen me, ngiyintombi ephelele ashodi ngaluthu surely someone like me is as heavy as 25kg rice.

He laughed out loud.

Lwandle: You finally here

She said already opening the door for us and attacking me with a hug.

I chuckled and hugged her back

Me: It good seeing you again Lwandle

Her smile widen

Lwandle: Come everyone is waiting to meet you

I smile shyly, Lumka chuckled and we walk inside, their interior design is red and gold. Everything looks new and shine, we passed long ass stairs that goes up, their wall is covered with pictures, I recognised Lumka and Lwandle the rest I didn't know. We talked to another closed door where there were people sitting around a dining table.

“Yooh you sure did take your time, thina silambile”

On the head of the table was an old man whom I assume is Lumka's father, beside him is an old woman whom I'm also guessing it his mother, beside her is one empty chair, next to the chair is a guy who's not even looking at us as his phone is occupying him, on the opposite side are other three boys who their eyes are on us.

Me: Hello

I greet

“Heeeh sana she's wearing pants emzini”

His mother said, I was wearing leggings with an oversized jacket. Simi got me these clothes. I secretly rolled my eyes.

Lumka: Mama please

I already doubt I like his mother.

“You may sit”

His father politely said.

“Come and sit next to Mama Lumka”

His mother said, Lumka looked at me and one empty seat next to his mother then back to me.

Lwandle: Ted can come and sit next to me

She said already taking my hand. We settled next to the phone guy who was still on his phone on his world, Lumka helped me sit.

Me: Thanks Lumka

“Aibo baba, she calls him by the name”

His mother again.

“MaZuma”

He said warningly

I settled down on the chair and looked at the phone guy beside me; he took a deep sigh and put his phone on top of the table. He turned to me, our eyes locked.

“Well welcome to hell”
He said and faked a smile.

MABANDLA

Zee walked in my study and just stood by the door not saying anything, Blade has started a war and if that what he wants I am going to give it to him; no scratch that I am going to serve it to him in a silver plate.

I sigh and focused my attention on her.

Me: Okay say it

She walked in and stood in front of me.

Zee: I don't want war Vezi

Me: He started it and he won't stop

Zee: Then give him what he wants

Me: No, I am loyal to my clients.

She groans

Zee: And your family? Are you loyal to your family? We have kids for heaven sake; this war will put their lives in danger.

Me: I will protect my family

Zee: You talking shit, stop fucking with a dangerous man the fucking last thing I want is my kids getting hurt. You said it yourself this man is a bastard he has no boundaries what makes you think he won't come for our kids to make you talk?

Me: Zee!

Zee: No Mabandla think about Junior and Quinton, I can not lose my kids. you can't go into war finish and klaar.

She said and walked out leaving me even more frustrated.

I took my phone and called my brother, as much as I love my kids I will never let Blade get away with shitting me on my own spot, who the fuck does he think he is?

Nkosi: Mabandla

Me: Zee don't want me to go on war

Nkosi: I know she called Spinach and told her to tell me not to go on war

He said and took a deep breath, then I just knew there is more to it.

Me: Then?

Nkosi: Then I lash out, we kind of got into an argument now she is not talking to me.

Me: You so stupid Nkosi, what did you say to upset her?

Nkosi: Kind of told her to back off

He said and took another heavy sigh.

Me: Just go and apologised and never tell your wife to back off, in fact next time let her think she has an upper hand.

Nkosi: I did apologise

Me: Well we still have a Blade to deal with and he is worse than angry wives. Zee is also mad at me.

Nkosi: I am coming over

Me: No let meet somewhere Zee will lose it.

Nkosi: Send me location

Me: On it.

BLADE

“Sir! Sir! I think I have something”

My IT guy came in my office running with his laptop not even knocking.

“It about Ted, I think I have something”

Now he has my whole attention.

“Remember that loser guy, the one who she rejected her proposal”

Me: Get to the point

“Oh well this is just the theory”

Me: Get to the point

“So the day Ted escaped here he disappeared for three days without going to work then he came back and resigned with immediately effect”

Me: umm

“There is more, after resigning he packed his bags and left Durban all together now there is a slightly chance that he has Ted

Me: Find him

“Already done, he is at his rural ...

Me: Send me the address we going there

I stood up and gathered my things.

NINETEEN

BLADE

We drove down to the village; the guy is a Prince finding his house wasn't difficult when we got to the village we were obvious, we stood out in my black SUV with my two guys. We drove to the palace didn't enter but we kept our cool and parked across the street then check for every movement that might be Amour. The girl she was with walked towards the palace and entered and I just knew I found her. All along she has been here hiding from me.

Me: Got you amour

Amour came out of a big house limping, she met the other girl half way and they hugged then walked around the yard talking. I couldn't help the smile that sneak on me, she's a fucking survivor. She survived. I can't wait to press her buttons. Before I could instruct my guys to go in and take her my phone rings on my pocket, I took it out not recognising the caller I picked up and didn't talk.

"Hello! Hello!"

It a family voice, a voice I don't even recognised.

"This is Zee I am Mabandla's wife, are you there?"

Oh Mabandla the guy who train assassin, he guy I want, the guy who owes me answers.

Me: What you want?

Why is he sending his wife to call me? He doesn't strike me as a pussy licker.

Zee: Look I would like to us to meet

Her feminine yet strong like amour's voice said through my phone speaker.

Me: What you want?

Zee: You looking for someone who ordered a hit on you, right?

I didn't respond to that, of course I am looking for that moron that why I fucking attacked her husband.

Zee: I know that person; meet me at NV security exactly at 3this afternoon

I noticed she didn't ask, she ordered me to meet her. She's in control; I wouldn't expect less from a guy like Mabandla. I have done my research I know what him and his brother are capable off and piece of advice never underestimate people with military skills.

Me: 7, I will meet you at 7

Zee: I sai ...

Me: 7

I repeat and dropped my phone, this could lead me to my slaughter but I will take my chances. When taking my chances I will need people looking over their family if shit happens to me shit will happen to their family in that way I won't take anyone with me when I drove down there.

Me: I am going back to the city; keep your eyes on her. Don't let her out of your sight, make sure you follow her where ever she goes, don't attack and don't take her till I tell you too.

I give the guys instructions before I got off the car and took a public taxi back to the city.

ZINNHLE ZUNGU –TEDDY

Living here was a nightmare waiting to happen, I hated everything about it. I hated Lumka's mother and I hated how Lumka is his mother's son. His mother is a she devil while his father is a sweetheart it such a shame he married her, she's fucking controlling it either her way or no way at all, then there is Lumka's brother Lungelo he has to be my favourite person here in the palace, he practically hate everyone; ok hate is a big word but he doesn't get along with everyone here, he's more like the black sheep, he only get along with Lwandle; who wouldn't? Lwandle is a sweetheart just like her father, she's kind hearted and always willing to help, I also like her. Simi and I walked back inside the house, she's working here as a servant.

Simi: You need to take walks so your leg would get use to walking

Me: Yea the doctor said I can also jog but not long distance

Simi: and please get some sleep too, you look like you haven't slept in a while I haven't really slept; I keep having this weird wet dream of this guy I can't recognise.

Me: Yea I haven't been getting enough sleep

Simi: Are you okay?

Me: Simi I think I am getting my memory back; there is this guy with brown beautiful eyes he keeps popping in my dreams.

Simi: But the doctor sa...

Me: I know what the doctor said Simi

“Aibo Simi what do you think this is? Your mother’s house? The bathrooms won’t scrub themselves”

Woman Hitler said standing by the door. Simi and I rolled our eyes.

Simi: I will see you, duty calls.

I gave her a brief hug.

Me: Okay before woman Hitler murder you

She laughed and jogs off; Lumka’s mother let her in while she stares at me with her evil eyes.

I sigh and turned my back on her.

I walked towards the gate, deciding I would rather take a walk then being in that house with that she devil. I limp my way out of the gate and bump into Lungelo walking inside.

Me: Hey

Lungelo: Where you going?

I shrug

Me: Taking a walk, I need some fresh air this house is suffocating.

He sighs

Lungelo: Tell me about it

He turned and joined me as we walk out

Lungelo: Mind if I join you?

Me: Be my guest

We walked out all the way to the gravel street, there was something calming about this place, about walking on the gravel road and stare at the green grass that blew fresh cold air.

Me: This is nice

He chuckled.

Lungelo: What walking with me?

I hit him slightly

Me: No silly, being outside, walking on this gravel road, staring at the nature it all seems nice

Lungelo: Calming

Me: Exactly

Lungelo: Breath of fresh air, I know that what living in that house does it suffocate you so much and by the time you step outside you feel refreshed and at peace.

I nod understanding exactly what he meant.

We passed a black car parked under a huge oak tree not far from the palace, he started showing me around, and there was nothing much about this village but I like the walk and I loved the peace that came with it.

MABANDLA

Me: What the fuck do you mean Zee?

Zee: He's on his way here, I told you we can't afford war just tell him wants he wants to know

Me: You got to be fucking kidding me, have you lost your god damn mind?

Knock

Blade: Wrong timing

He said walking in, and I have never been this angry with my wife before, exactly at that moment I felt like struggling her to death or better yet give her a slap that will send her butt flat on the floor. How could she fucking call Blade here? He walked in confidently and sat on the chair across me.

Me: You got to be fucking kidding me

I said starting at Zee who was beside me, she pleaded with her eyes.

Me: Get the fuck out of my property!

I said staring at the Blade guy, he stare back

Blade: Your wife invited me here not you

Me: And I am telling you to fucking get out

The door opened Nkosi walked in, when his eyes landed on Blade they turned stormy same time.

Nkosi: You fucking called me here for this shit?

He asked staring at Zee

Zee: You need t...

Nkosi: What the fuck is this shit?

He said staring at me, he's angry so fucking angry. Zee shouldn't have involved him. She knows damn well Bukhosi is a ticking bomb.

Me: Get out Zee

Zee: But I ...

Me: Get the fuck out

I said through my teeth, she hesitated for a moment then rushed out. Nkosi walked in and stood beside Blade then stare down at him.

Nkosi: You attacked us and have the nerve to come here?

Blade: His wife invited me here; I couldn't turn down such honour

He answered calmly. Nkosi turned his eyes to me communicating with me with his eyes, telling me how much Zee fucked us up

Me: We don't fucking care this shit is between you and me not my fucking wife

Blade: Seems like your wife is the smart one though

Nkosi grabbed him by the collar and lifted him up, Blade stood up calmly and stare at Nkosi with even range, Fuck Zee now I am the one who has to fucking calm Nkosi before he does something stupid.

Blade: I would think twice if I were you well that is if you still want to keep your precious daughter at her pre-school

Nkosi: You son of a bitch what did you just said

Me: Let him go Nkosi

The door opened again, Zee and Spinach walked in.

Nkosi let go of Blade and turned to them

Nkosi: What the fuck you doing here?

His question was directed to his wife who just stood there staring at him

Her: Ndlangamandla we don't want war, not when I am like this. Please baba just do the right thing, give the man what he wants

She said in a sweet voice rubbing her ready to pop stomach. She's pregnant with their fifth kid. Nkosi rubbed his face angrily

Nkosi: Go home

Blade: Congratulations on your pregnancy Mrs Nkosi

He said with his cold voice. Nkosi groaned; Blade knew exactly which buttons to push.

My dead stare focused on my stupid wife, I am so fucking angry at her right now.

TWENTY

MABANDLA

The moment I got home I took two stairs at a time rushing to my bed room fuming with anger, I found Zee wrapped in a towel she just finished bathing. She looked up at me as I walk pass her towards the closet, I grab my formal pants then walked back to her and threw it at her.

Me: Wear them

Zee: Eeh

Me: Don't Eeh me, you are the man right? Wear my pants I will wear your skirt

Zee: Babe I am...

Me: Don't fucking babe me; wear those fucking pants before I force them on you

Zee: Babe please, I was just trying to look out for the kids

Me: Oh because you think I am not good enough? Because you think I am not capable of taking care of my own fucking kids?

Zee: That not what I meant

Me: Don't fuck with me Zee, since you are more capable of taking care of this family you should start wearing fucking pants

She started crying, she knows her tears are my weakness she knows damn well I can't afford to see her cry but this time she can cry all she fucking like, she fucking made a fool of me and drag Spinach into it now I have to make sure Nkosi don't fucking lose it with her cause he's fucking mad as hell.

Me: Wipe those fucking tears and wear the damn pants

Zee: Babe I am sorry, please I am so sorry you are the man, you are capable of taking care of us it was a mistake I am sorry.

I walked up to her and snatch the towel it fell on the floor; I lift her up and forcefully made her wear the pants.

Zee: What are you doing? This is wrong? Ouch you hurting me, you are manhandling me!

She said crying, my pants were too big for her, I walked back to the closet and grabbed a tie with a white shirt, i used the tie as a belt and tied the pants on her then put on the shirt, buttoned it up and tag it in.

Me: Take them off and you will know what I am made off

Zee: Babe!

She pleaded. She looked hilarious, the pants and the shirt were just too big on her. She crotch down crying, I left her there and walked away.

Zee: Where you going?

She asked between tears

Me: To buy a skirt that will fit me, if that okay with you baba

I said staring back at her, she stare back with pleading eyes not saying anything, I click my tongue and walked out.

ZINHLE ZUNGU –TEDDY

Lumka's father is sick, it has gotten worse therefore Lumka and I are being groomed to take over, him as a King and me as the Queen. Honestly speaking I don't want all this shit, we always up and down with the elders and I get to spend more time with his evil mother who hate my gut, worse Lumka is a fucking controlling freak, he tells me what to wear, how to walk, who talk too, who to hang out with it so fucking frustrating and it only a matter of time before I snap.

Lungelo and I jog in the palace, we are jogging buddies been jogging for the past few days, did I mention I am getting married in few weeks? Lwandle is excited, you would swear she's the one getting married but I am not even close to being happy, we started stretching before we parted ways. Lungelo is cool, he doesn't talk much so hanging out with him is much better, I jog up the stairs to the bathroom and took a bath, they have running water in this house but I was told not all houses have running water only the palace. After I was done bathing I walked in our room and wore a dress, Lumka walked in and looked at me up and down.

Lumka: That dress is too short

Me: It not like I am going anywhere

It was already afternoon, we were to grab diner with his family. He is only not approving of the dress because his mother won't approve.

Lumka: I don't care it short and I told you to stop jogging with Lungelo

I rolled my eyes and comb my hair ignoring him

Lumka: I said that dress is too short

Me: Aike that your problem not mine.

Lumka: Say that again Teddy

Me: Who the fuck do you think I am? Your child? You don't get to fucking tell me what to wear. I wear whatever shit I like get that through you fucking thick skull.

Lumka: Oh you talk back at me now; you know what your problem? You think you are the man in this relationship, you don't respect me.

I laughed

Me: Your problem is you demand respect and you want to control me. I am not a fucking push over Lumka

Lumka: You were told to stop calling me by name

Me: Haibo weee ngaze ngalithwala idombolo

Lumka: Take that dress off, stop jogging with Lungelo and address me as baba

Me: udakiwe

Lumka: What did you just say Teddy

He walked up to me; I turned and faced him head on feeling a range rising inside me.

Me: I said fuck you! In fact fuck this shit, I am not gonna marry your fucking ass, fuck all this shit!

I said and walked pass him, he grabbed me by arm before I could react to the grab he gave me a hard slap across my face.

Me: What the fuck!

Lumka: Who the hell do you think you are?

My hand was itching, so fucking itching that I had to do it, so I did it. I slap him back, his eyes pop out.

Lumka: Msunu kanyoko! S'febe! Uyangishaya!

He grab my neck trying to choke me, I hit his hand from my neck and sent a fist on his stomach, in a matter of a second I had him on the ground and I was sitting on top of him, slapping him across his face.

He was no longer fighting back but still I couldn't help the range that I felt inside, I couldn't stop hitting him, I would move from slapping to giving him fists, for some strange reason I loved how I felt when I hit him, I loved how my blood pumped, someone grabbed me, lifting me off him, my hands had blood and Lumka was just lying there on the floor with blood all over his face.

Lungelo: Jeez what the fuck is this Ted?

He asked rushing to Lumka who was just lying there not moving, he slap him slightly on the face while calling his name.

Lungelo: Lumka! Lumka! Ted! Go get water he is not moving

I could hear him from afar; my mind wasn't attached to what he was saying.

Lungelo: Teddy!

He half shouts, I stood up fast from where I was sitting.

Me: Eeh! What? He is not moving

Lungelo: Go get water Teddy!

He shouts again, I rushed out and ran down the stairs to get water then rushed back to the room where Lungelo was still trying to wake up Lumka

BLADE

I filled the five litre bucket with cold water then walked to the room where Shane was sleeping soundless. I stood beside his bed watching him and every fibre in me wanted him dead just like he wanted me dead. After my encounter with the Vezi's yesterday they finally gave in to their wives and told me who ordered them to have me killed. One thing I learnt their wives are their weakness, if I ever want to get to them in future I will definitely use their wives. I poured the whole bucket on Shane, he jump up gasping for air.

Shane: eh! Eh! What the fuck!

I slap him across the face and he fell back on the bed then rose up and jump five feet away from me

Shane: Blade bro wait! Wait!

Me: So you wanted me dead

Shane: No! I would never ... I ...I please wait let me explain

Me: You fucked me, I trusted you

Shane: Please let me explain

I took the water pipe and walked to him then started hitting him with it; he tried to fight me back but I pushed him he fell butt flat on the floor. I walked to him not caring where I actually hit him, I hit him so damn hard and he was busy screaming like a bitch, he could scream all he likes I am not done with him, I still got far more things planned for him, I want him to die a slow painful death and I am the one who will fucking kill him. After I was satisfied for now I walked out leaving him bruised and bleeding, I locked the door and left.

I am going to get Amour today because she's fucking part of Shane dying's plan.

TWENTY ONE

ZINHLE ZUNGU – TEDDY

Lungelo couldn't stop laughing, he would even bend over, roll on his stomach and tears were just making their way out of his eyes due to laughter and at that moment I was so worried I just sat there irritated as fuck.

Lungelo: I can't believe this shit; you beat up Lumka till he passed out
He laughed again.

Lungelo: you killing me Batista

He kept on laughing, hitting the floor with his hand as he was lying on the floor. As much as I am worried about my life from now on I couldn't help but join Lungelo to his laughing spree but I swear I wasn't laughing at Lumka I was laughing at Lungelo his laughter was a whole mood.

Me: Will you stop

Lungelo: No man I give it to you, you are the best thing that ever happened in my life. Where the fuck have you been all my life. Yoo you definitely rearranged his face, damn Ted you are so bad.

Me: I gave him a beating of a life time didn't i?

I laughed.

Me: He deserved it though

Lungelo: I swear if I was straight I was sure gonna fuck you and marry you just to spite him

He said between laughter.

Me: Woah you are gay?

He stopped laughing and stood up, dust himself then sat on his bed beside me.

Lungelo: That why I am treated like an outcast

Me: Damn you don't look gay

Lungelo: (He chuckled) I am not feminine that all

Me: You are too handsome for being gay

Lungelo: oh wow

Me: No offence

Lungelo: Non taken

Me: So problem at hand, what do we do with your brother seeing that he kicked me out of his room the moment he woke up.

Lungelo started from scratch and laughed again.

Lungelo: Did you see him when he woke up; he literally jumped up ready to run

Me: Oh god I can't do this with you.

I stood up and walked out.

Lungelo: Where you going?

Me: Far away from your silly ass

Lungelo: Are you off to giving him round two

Me: Fuck you!

He laughed.

I walked away all the way out of the gate; it was an early morning last night I had to sleep at Lungelo's room since Lumka kicked me out of his room. I do not know what will happen with my life right now, will I go home? Will Lumka forgive and forget of which I doubt, Mabona doesn't seem to love me that much in fact I don't even feel any connection with her as my mother. One thing I am sure of Lumka's mother will make sure I pay for beating Lumka. I am wearing a t-shirt and pant it kinda cold outside since it still early but I kept walking instead of going back to the house, I just feel like I need the walk.

I took a deep sigh as I walked out of the gate.

What kind of a person I am? How can I beat someone to almost death and still not feel bad about it? Am I even human? Lumka almost died but still I don't feel anything, no remorse nothing? I haven't even apologised to him. Maybe taking this walk will clear my head then I will feel bad and go back to apologise, he's my fiancé for heaven sake. As I walked on the gravel road leaving the palace behind me my mind was busy trying to figure out what is happening with my life. Who was Teddy before the accident? This memory lost thing is frustrating as fuck.

Scratches of a car stopping beside me startled me making me jump on a far side of the road before I could even make out what was happening two guys came out of the car and grabbed me.

Me: What the hell you doing?

They just grabbed me and tried to force me into a car and it click I am being kidnap. Page | 126

Me: Let go of me, help! Help!

I pressed my foot on the car and did a back making them let go of my arms when the shorter one came towards me to grab me again I kicked him with my foot on his chest and he fell against the car hitting his head. The taller one looked from his friend then to me, I was ready to fight him as much as my heart was beating out of it rib cage I was ready. He put up his fist and came towards me in a speed knocking me off, I fell on the ground with him on top of me and the only thing I had access to was his ear as it was close to my mouth so I did what any human in my position would do. I bite his ear so hard ready to take it off, he screamed and pushed me off him as he tried to stood up but I wrapped my legs around him and held on to his ear, I could taste his blood on my mouth and it tasted bitter but I wasn't gonna let his ear without getting a piece of it.

Him: Bitch let go of me

My hands were around his neck and my legs were wrapped on his waist, his head on my shoulder and of course my mouth on his ear. He hit my back so hard with his fist but I still didn't let go, he pinch me so hard and I bite even harder on his ear as he back away he stepped on a stone and we both fell that when I let go of him and I had a piece of his ear on my mouth as I fell beside him. Leaving him crying holding his half hear that was gushing blood, I spit the ear on the ground as I try to catch my breath. A sound of someone clapping hands startled me making me jump. He was leaning on the car clapping with a wide smile on his face, he's exactly like in my dreams, dark chocolate, buff body, beautiful brown eyes that captured mine the moment I stare at them.

Me: You!

Him: You never cease to amaze me Amour

He put his hands on his pocket and just stood there looking at me with an amused face.

Me: Amour?

I said in confusion. The short guy was busy trying to help his friend as he put clothes on his ear stopping the blood, he also was holding his back head as it bleed due to hitting it on the car the moment I kicked him.

Him: So checkmate

He said giving me a side smile.

Now I am busy cracking my skull trying to think who he is, was he my boyfriend with a mentally disorder? Is he a jealous ex? Is he obsessive or maybe my ex that used to abuse me? Who are you pretty face? Either way I wasn't gonna wait around to find out these people came here for war, meaning if I knew them we probably didn't get along so I backed off a little getting ready to run for my life.

Him: Don't even think about it

He said pointing at me with a gun

Me: Oh boy you might as well take your shot.

I said as I speed off catching him off guard

Him: Fuck!

I hear him say as he run after me, I doubt I have ran like this in my whole entire life, I felt like a Caster Simenya as I ran for my life going towards the palace, he was right on my tracks I was so closed to the gate when he trip me with his foot and I fell on my stomach almost knocking my teeth on the gravel road. I quickly turned and he stood over me with his hands on his pocket like he has been standing like that all along.

Him: Damn you are tiring

I grabbed some soil with my hand and threw it on his eyes.

Me: Take that

I quickly stood up and tried to run again.

Him: Not so fast Amour, you seem to forget I am not an amateur.

He grabbed me and squeezed me on his chest, god fuck he smell so damn good.

Me: Let me go

I tried to fight him but he has my hands bound together with his hands I was no match against his strong arms but I had my knee and I could use it so I did exactly that I hit his dick with my knee, he groaned.

Him: Fuck! Fuck!

He road loudly before I could make any other move he pushed me and I fell on my stomach, he was on me in a blink of an eye, he pressed his knee on my back pressing me on the ground then he grabbed my hands roughly as he tie them on my back.

Me: Let me go! Let me go! Help! Help! Simi! Simi!

He moved his knee from my back and grabbed my feet and tied them too.

Me: You fucking asshole, bitch motherfucker ugly pretty frog you fucking pervert.

He said no more as he lifts me up and put me on his shoulder then walked back to the car.

CONSEQUENCES –HATING HIM! BREAKING HER!

Him: Open the boot

He ordered, I tried to fight him but I was tied there was nothing much I could do.

Me: You can't fucking put me in a boot you asshole

He just threw me there like I am a sack of potatoes then slammed the boot shut as I scream my lungs out while kicking.

TWENY TWO

ZINHLE ZUNGU – TEDDY

My whole body hurt so bad, looking around I was sleeping on a single bed, wearing the same clothes I was wearing with blood stains from that guy's ear and the room was a little bit dark only one candle on the floor that bought light. I quickly jump up looking around the big room that had only one small single bed, a blanket and the candle only. Like any normal person the first thing I did was run to the door, I tried opening it but it was locked. I looked around the room and there were no windows, only ventilators. I hit the door while shouting.

Me: Let me out! Let me out!

But no one came; it was so quiet on the other side of the door.

Me: Help! Anyone please help!

Still it was dead quiet, I moved the door handle trying to see if I could break out.

I tried almost everything I could think of but it the door wouldn't break and right there and then I just knew I have no way out. I sat butt flat on the floor and lean against door as tears gushed out. How did I got here? What is happening with my life? Who am i? I sat there starring at the candle, as it gave me hope. You know what they say about your candle being your light that will always shine your life even on your darkest moment. When an Idea popped in my head I smiled a little and wipe off the stupid tears.

Me: Damn Ted you are a genius girl

I walked towards the bed and pushed it all the way towards the door when it was perfectly blocking the door I walked up to the candle and grabbed it. Looking at it like it human.

Me: Be my light in darkness and get me out of here.

I smiled a little before walking towards the single bed and set it on fire then tried to get the flames towards the door. I took off my t shirt and wrapped it around my nose and mouth to avoid inhaling smoke. The flames went up and the door was slowly burning but the smoke was too much as it had no other way to leave the room. I backed away and sat at the far corner. Watching the bed being on flame tricked some memory, all I could hear was a man's scream and he was burning.

Me: No! No!

I tried breathing but I couldn't breathe, his screams were so loud and painful.

Me: No! No! please noooo!

I cried lying on the floor as I still struggled to breathe.

Me: No! Stop!

I said crying with my hands wrapped around my ears as I tried to block out the screams, I struggled to breathe so hard in a way that I had to take off the t shirt from my mouth and nose so I would be able to breathe but all I could inhale was smoke and smoke and more smoke.

Me: Hel ... he ... he ...lp ..me hel ... help

The smoke was choking me to death, and I could feel myself slowly passing out. I heard faint voices outside the door.

"Get more fucking water"

From the bright light I could spot from outside the half open door I could tell that was supposed to be my freedom.

"Fucking shit"

More water were poured on the flames all I remember is the door falling, more voices and some human figures then a very bright light and I passed out.

BLADE

I stood beside her and just stare down at her as she sleeps so peaceful you would swear she is not crazy the way she is sleeping you would even mistake her with a saint. The doctor left about an hour ago and said she will be alright she inhaled lot of smoke and suffered a panic attack. I still can't figure out who is Teddy, she just started existing few years ago, where was she all along? This girl is crazy did she had a death wish when she burned down the bed? I took a deep sigh and cuffed her one hand on the bed headboard then left her there. Since she burned down the other room I had her kept in I moved her to the other room and made sure to install a camera this time and cuff her because wow she is one crazy motherfucker I have ever met.

For what I have planned for her I couldn't do it at the club since there are too many people always around I couldn't risk having her escape again. So I bought a cottage that is made of stones pretty much nice next to a dam it perfect and excluded from people not to mention it far from the main road so basically here she is all alone even if she escapes it would take her forever to get help

from anyone. I walked to the lounge and poured me a full glass of scotch and walked to the balcony, sat there relaxing with the tablet on my hand monitoring her if she wakes up.

I took a deep sigh and sip on my scotch.

Damn this girl is hard work, so fucking tiring but I will teach her to obey, I want her to be submissive and she won't even recognise herself by the time I am done with her my phone ring from my pocket, I fished it out and picked up.

Me: Yes

“Sir we have the girls, two white two dark skinned and thick as you requested”

Me: Perfect keep them at the club I will be there in-

I checked the time on my wrist.

Me: In two hours

“Yes sir”

I dropped the call and gulp down the whole glass, loving the way it burned my chest as it goes down, checking the tablet she was still fast asleep. I stood up and grabbed my car keys then handed out. I walked towards the two guys whom I had guarding Amour just in case her smart ass find the way to escape.

Me: I'm off do not go to her room, don't even go near it unless I tell you to

“Sure boss”

I left them sitting outside and drove off.

My clients can be so specific as now they want submissive since I have a lot on my plate I can't train the new girls to be submissive which is why I will assign them to someone else for training then they will be good to go. As for Amour I will train her personally then decide if I keep her or sell her to the highest bidder. It no longer about breaking her only I want to teach her a lesson she will never forget even after life. As I drive I kept checking the tablet just in case there is any movement but still she was sleeping not even moving an inch. Just when I entered N2 I saw a movement on the tablet, she rubbed her face then jump up when she realised her one hand was tied. She screamed in frustration. And tried to take off the hand cuff but the more she tries to take it off the more she hurt herself. She stopped and looked around probably looking for what she could use. She was still topless since she is the one who took off her t-shirt. She hasn't bath since morning, looking at her bare upper body that was covered only in a sport bra she grabbed the blanket and covered herself.

Teddy: I want to pee you asshole!

She screamed looking at the door.

Teddy: Hello I want to pee!

She screamed again getting more frustrated and I couldn't help the amused face.

Teddy: I will fucking pee on this bed.

Oh do it sweetheart, do it and you will sleep on your own pee.

Teddy: Come on I am not a dog

Oh yes you are my pet, you might as well be my dog.

Teddy: You are an asshole fucking asshole! You hear me! Once I get my hands on you I will fucking kill you I swear!

Oh amour when you get your hands on me, you will fuck me and suck me dry sweetheart.

She lies back on the bed and stare at the ceiling, not moving. This time there is no candle, it electricity she won't be burning anything. She sits up and looked around obvious calculating her next move then she lie back on the bed as if she just realised she is never leaving that room.

Oh Amour you might as well just get comfortable because you are not going anywhere sweetheart it just me and you and that room forever.

TWENY THREE

ZINHLE ZUNGU –TEDDY

I have been here in this big room for hours now and no one has come in here, I am hungry and so damn thirsty. This room is different from the one I burned, this one has a window I could see the sun set and I could tell it now the night as it so dark, there is a double bed and a wardrobe only. I can't even move as my hand is tied. I feel so frustrated I even want to cut off my hand so I would just get the fuck out of here. The way I am so starving I could eat a whole lion all by myself and my throat is so dry. I lay there facing the ceiling making sure to keep my tears from falling, I shouldn't cry, I should think of the way to get out of here. There has to be a way, there must be a way.

I stopped thinking as I hear footsteps approaching the door, then the key click and the door open. His eyes were the first thing that found me. I stare at them not breaking the eye contact as he closed the door behind him; he walked towards me and stood beside me with his hands on his pocket. Neither of us said anything we just stare at each other, how could he be so heartless when he has such beautiful eyes, ain't bad guys supposed to have red scary eyes or something like that. In my dreams he is a goodness, his touch makes my body burn up, the way he grabbed me and pressed me on the bed then fuck me feels so good I wonder how that would feel in real life, having him fuck me and press me against the bed, not that I want to be fucked by this monster I am just wondering if it would feel good like in my dreams. My eyes moved from his beautiful eyes to his lips, so perfect, they moved to his jaws so strong then down to his whole body then back to his eyes.

Me: Why am I here?

I asked the question I have been inching to ask.

Him: Oh so now you are calm

Me: What do you want from me?

I didn't want to show him that I lost my memory; I didn't want him to see such weakness. I wanted to appear strong and in control when deep down I am dying a slow painful death. My soul is slowly being shattered.

Him: You stink

Me: Wanna lick me

He chuckled.

Him: Still got that smart mouth I see

Me: So how long are you planning to keep me here?

Him: Forever

Me: They will find me you know

He laughed.

Him: Sweetheart the last time I checked you took off your tracker.

My tracker? I had a tracker? For what?

Me: They will find me

I said putting on a straight face.

Him: No they won't sweetheart

I stare at him again and I wondered who was he in my life?

Him: So let talk about your terms and conditions.

I gave him a bored look.

Him: You will address me as Master

I couldn't help the laughter that broke off.

Me: What? You crazy I am not going to do that shit, you are no Master. You are a fucking pussy who oppress on defenceless woman, a fucking pervert and your day will come you will rip what you saw

Him: Umm ...okay then no food for you, no water, no peeing and no bathing till you call me Master.

Me: fuck you

Him: Let see how long you will survive Amour

He said and just walked out closing the door behind him.

Me: Fuck you! Fuck you asshole.

He locked and walked away leaving me frustrated as hell.

I have been up all night, I want to pee and I am so hungry. As the sun rise through the window I still hasn't seen him not that I want to see him but I really needed to pee, it only a matter of time before I actually mess the bed and myself. My mouth smell like shit I could use some freshening up.

I sigh and kept my focus on the window where the sign of life came, seeing the sun rise and some light got to be the only thing that is making me not so depressed. The door opened and the devil walked in with a big cardboard he walked towards the window and covered it with the cardboard making sure there is no sign of life, making sure I am in darkness, the hell that he has me kept in, I closed shut my eyes as he finish up and left me there without saying anything. re has to be a way out of here, I just need to think.

Come on Ted think girl, think.

SIMI

Me: You have to do something, please I know Ted she didn't leave. She is missing.

Page | 135

Mabona: I am not going to do anything

Me: Oh my god they are going to kill her.

I started pacing up and down, my hands are literally tied I don't even know what to do, one thing I know for sure she didn't leave she lost her memory for heaven sake so she can't rock up and decide to leave. Something happened to her and no one cares, not even Lumka.

Me: Yoo what am I going to do

There was a knock on the door.

Mabona: Come in

The palace messenger walked in and greeted.

"The king sent me to summon Simi"

Me: Did they find Ted

"I have no idea he j-

I didn't wait for him to finish as I run off towards the palace. Upon my arrival I was escorted by one of the girls I work with there, she led me to egondlweni (A King's hut). Lumka's mother, Lumka, two elders and the King were there waiting on me.

King: Nkosazane

The king is so kind hearted in a way that he would show respect regarding your status or your age. Even to us the servants he shows us so much respect, he always says please and thank you such a humble King is rare.

Me: Did you find Ted?

Lumka's mother: Sit down where is your respect.

I rolled my eyes before settling down.

King: Unfortunately we haven't heard anything on your sister and that not why I called you here.

I looked at everyone seated on the table one by one, Lumka's face was bruised and swollen. I settled my eyes back to the King with confusion.

King: Few months back my son came home excited, saying he has found a wife that he loves and wants to spend the rest of his life with. As someone who is a strong believer of true love and happily ever after I let him to marry the woman of his choice.

Me: What that got to do with me?

Lumka's mother: Will you shut up.

She snaps, I gave her a nasty look before returning my attention back to the King.

King: He came to us and begs us to accept an outsider as his wife, not to mention this outsider came into our lives wounded and on her death bed. He said he loves her so we decided to give them a chance at love.

Lumka's mother mumbled something inaudible.

King: But she got here and disrespected the future King, she laid her hand on him.

I looked at Lumka who made sure to avoid eye contact with me. Damn Ted really did a number on him.

King: That not only disrespectful her actions are punishable, had she not ran away she was going to have to pay a cow as a cleansing for her obscenity then we would've decided which punishment was suitable for her.

Me: I am still not sure why I am here

King: The wedding is this weekend invitations have been handed out to all kingdoms, Lumka must take over the chieftaincy as soon as now since I don't have much time. As our run away bride's sister you are obligated to take over her duties, with that said the wedding won't be cancelled. You will marry the future King this coming weekend.

Me: What?

King: Failing to do that will result to you being kicked from this village; you are not to set foot ever again.

Me: With all due respect sir I am not going to marry him

Lumka's mother: Hallelujah

Me: I will be packing my bags, thank you for your kindness and for letting us in your village with warm hands. I hope the next King will at least be half the man you are and I am wishing this kingdom all the best.

I said sincerely then stood up to leave.

Me: If you let your mother control you the way she does even when you are the King then I shudder to know what will become of this kingdom, she's poison. Be a man for once and stood your grounds.

I said looking at Lumka then bow a little and left leaving everyone mumbling something I couldn't make out.

Lumka's mother: Hamba mthakathi!

She shouted after me.

TWENTY FOUR

ZINHLE ZUNGU –TEDDY

It day five if I am not mistaken without food, water, nor bath and I am sleeping on my own pee. I smell like a pig, the whole room smell he comes once a day to check on me, with every minutes passing I feel even more weaker, it only a matter of time before I give in and call him whatever he wants me to call him, I am desperately and desperation calls for desperate majors. I don't even know if it morning or night, everything feels the same in this house. I could feel depression slowly creeping in; the only thing I can think of at this moment is death.

The door opened, he stood by the door and looked at me. I am sure I look like hell. I raised my eyes slowly and stare at him; I could feel that there was no life left in me anymore.

Me: Can ...can I ...have some food ... Master

I couldn't even talk proper as I had to save every breath I take.

Him: Say please

I swallowed a nowhere to be found saliva.

Me: Please

Him: Please who?

If I had energy I was going to strangle him to death

Me: Ma ...ster ...please master

He nods his head and walked in, he walked to the wardrobe and got a neck chain similar to the one used on dogs, he came to me and put it around my neck. The only thing I could do is give him my fire eyes showing him how I am actually burning inside. He then unlocked the hand cuff on my hand; my poor wrist was left with a red bruise that is so painful.

I let out a sigh of relief as I rub my wrist.

Him: Get off the bed

I slowly slide down, but when I tried to stand I felt dizzy and sat on the bed.

Him: On your knees

Me: What?

Him: On your fucking knees

I did as told with my jaws clench hard; he used the chain on my neck to lead me out of the room like I am a dog taking a walk with him in a park. My knees hurt as they met with the cold tiles. He walked out with me following or rather

crawling after him like his puppet, stepping out of the room that has become my prison we stepped into a passage opposite my prison he opened another door where he walked in and I crawled in after him, it a bathroom. He started running the water as I remain kneeling on the cold tiles.

Him: Take off your clothes

I just looked at him without saying anything nor taking my clothes off.

Him: Rule number two don't you ever look at me in the eyes.

I still didn't move my eyes from his eyes. I wasn't ready for the slap that came in contact with my cheek sending me on the floor.

Him: When I say something you obey, understood.

I spit the blood on my mouth on the floor as I try to be on my knees again.

Me: Yes

He slapped me again sending me flying on the floor, still I didn't cry as much as I saw stars I still didn't give him my precious tears.

Him: I am your Master; you address me as Master all the time, understood.

Me: Yes ...master

I said still lying on the floor.

Him: Rule number three when I order you to do something never make me repeat myself

Me: Yes ...master

Calling him master had to be the most difficult thing I ever had to do. It left a bitter taste on my mouth.

Him: Now take off your clothes.

I slowly sat up and took off the sport bra that was stinking, my average cute boobs were displayed for this monster to feed on them with his beautiful eyes, the pants I was wearing followed leaving myself only with panties. I wanted to look him in the eyes but I couldn't cause that will be breaking rule number two. I sigh before taking off the panties, I usually shave but considering the fact that I haven't shaved in a while I had a small bush down there, I stood with my head facing down but my shoulders held high as if standing right in front of him naked and with no strength didn't bother me when it killed me so much inside.

Him: Typically Amour always trying to be in control, umm I'm curious to know how long will you keep up your little pathetic pride.

He said before ordering me to enter the bath tap. The ice cold water made me shiver as I tried to settle down, closing my eyes I slide down and sat then took a deep breath and opened my eyes only to find him staring at me, I tried I

really tried not to stare back but I couldn't help it, his brown eyes always have a way of capturing me and locked me on them. It still battles me how a person with such beautiful eyes can be so cruel. What did I ever do to this man for him to hate me this much and make me go through such pain? Is he even human? Does he have a heart? My thigh burning from his slap is what got me to shift my eyes from him.

Him: You are breaking rule number two

I looked away.

Him: Apologise

Me: I apologise Master

Him: Bath

He threw a bathing sponge on me which I took and started scrubbing myself, the cold water is slowly starting to feel so good against my skin and soothing, he sit on the toilet seat just looking at me, I could feel his eyes on me roaming around, I blocked him out and just kept scrubbing avoiding the chain on my neck by all means. I washed my body thoroughly even went as far as washing my pussy squeaky clean right in front of him.

Him: That enough now

He said handing me a towel to wrap myself. I dried and wrapped myself before stepping to the full length mirror. I looked like hell even after bathing still looked like shit, from a drawer on the bathroom cabinet he took out a white dress and threw it at me, after moisturising I put on the dress it long touching my ankles.

Me: What about a panty ...master?

Him: Rule number four you don't ask questions, you obey only

He said as he led me out of the bathroom, I feel good refreshed but still hella hungry. We walked into a kitchen I didn't even bother with looking around, checking the interior my focus was on the pot and the fridge and my heart was like, you only metres away girl!

Him: On your knees

I silently groaned before going on my knees. He tied the chain around a dining table before walking to the stove and dished up on a small bowl, I doubt I will even be full but hey the girl can't complain can she? He came back and placed the food right in front of me with no spoon, it a beef stew and rice.

Him: Eat

Me: Can I have a spoon master

Him: Use your mouth

I stilled looking at the bowl of food if I wasn't hungry I was not even gonna consider eating like a dog.

Him: Yes eat like a dog amour.

I bite my lower lip so hard before bending over and eat like a dog. I muffed the food like a dog as I was so hungry after I was done I licked the bowl clean then took a deep breath and just stare at the empty spotless bowl. Only if I could have more, Just one last bowl.

Him: Here is some water

When I looked up to take the water he just poured them on my face making me gasps for air as he caught me by surprise.

Me: You fucking ass-

I stopped myself as he yanks me up with my hair.

Him: I feed you now you are shitting me

I didn't respond I just looked up at him as he held my hair so tight and painful. His hand around my hair tightens forcing me to look away from his eyes.

Him: You won't be getting your next meal till I feel like you deserve it

I used my elbow and hit his stomach hard then my knee to hit his dick. He bent over letting go off me since I caught him off guard I tried to run but the chain on my neck held me back making me to almost fall, I screamed in agony as it hurt like shit on my neck, he held my legs and I fell face flat on the floor.

TWENY FIVE

ZINHLE ZUNGU – TEDDY

True to his words I haven't got my next meal, my hand is tied on the same smelly wet bed and I am just lying there fuming with anger. The rage I feel inside could collapse mountains given a chance. I have been trying to sleep on the other warm side of bed and as for the monster with beautiful eyes I haven't seen him, I last saw him yesterday after he gave me one hella slap. Funny thing is I am not scared, the only thing I am feeling is anger so much anger that given a chance I will the monster with beautiful eyes without thinking twice. As I lay there on the bed staring into space I wondered if Lumka is worried about me, is Simi worried, how about Mabona. Do they even care that I am gone or they are just too happy to get rid of me. I hope they at least contact the police, but who am I kidding I gave Lumka one hella beating before I got kidnapped I am sure he is just too happy that I am gone and with no doubt I know he wishes death upon me where ever he is, not that I blame him.

The opened and he the monster with beautiful eyes walked in.

Me: You might as well consider moving your own bed in here because damn you love being around me.

He didn't respond he just stare at me.

Me: My pee must smell really that good for you not to be able to stay away, I should shit next time maybe you will just move in with me

He walked up to me and just stood over me with his hands on his pocket again our eyes just locked, I wanted to look beyond the beautiful eyes and I wanted to read his soul but all I could see is the beauty of his eyes, he is a monster why his eyes are not ice cold.

Him: You are one hot headed woman I have ever met

Me: Judging by your obsession I would say I am one hella hot chick you have ever met

Him: Now I am curious ...how many days will it take me to bend you.

Me: What? You want to bend me over and fuck me?

I looked at him up and down

Me: Too bad I don't fuck pervert pussies; I only fuck real a man.

He smirk, is he cute or what?

Him: You definitely rare, so rare and perfect, I love challenge amour and you so fascinating, such a work of art so perfect.

I just stare at him disgust.

Him: Oh amour you so perfect.

He said smiling and walked out locking the door behind him.

Son of a bitch!

All I could think about is he loves challenge. He loves challenge and I have been feeding his sickening obsession. I must change I have to change; I must give him the opposite of what he loves. He doesn't know me to well. I can do this. I can do this, I can be submissive I can have him fooled to thinking he has won. I just to push his button so he would do something so painfully and unbearable, then I will just be boom submissive he won't see me coming. I can sure fool him.

Now what can I do to push his buttons?

I must have fallen asleep while thinking of ways I could push his button as I woke up with an eager to take a shit, and god damn I knew it was impossible to shit in a toilet like a normal person since I am more like a dog in this place, either way I did shout for him.

Me: I wanna take a shit!

It went quiet

Me: Please master, I really have to take a shit. Oh God it coming.

SIMI

Since I left the village and went back to the city I had nowhere to go and the was no way I will go back home my step father is something else, times like these makes me miss my sister who was murdered by that man named Blade right in front of my eyes. She always had plans for everything. The only money I had with me was the money I worked at the palace, I am renting a cheap bnb while job haunting with no lucky. I sleep with a brown bread and just water, if I don't get a job as soon as now I won't have a place to stay next month. I could go to Ted's big house but I am scared for my life that girl has wronged so many people what if they come in search of her and find me instead then kill me. No I will make a plan. I grabbed my back pack and left locking the door, it another day and I am still job haunting. I went from shop to shop but nothing, with no

ID or CV getting a job was slowly becoming impossible. I walked into a Pakistan shop that is around the corner from where I am staying. I wanted to sell the phone Lwandle bought me, it was no use to me anymore and it costed a lot so I am hoping the guy will pay well for it.

I walked and a Pakistan guy was behind a counter while some guy was sitting on a chair reading a newspaper.

Me: Hello

“Hey you the new girl, you live at the bnb right?”

Me: Yes I wanted to sell my phone

I wasn't there to make friends or anything like that.

“Things are tough girl eeh, wena faka faka ma cv koda lutho thola msebenzi.”

Me: Yea job these days is scarce, how much would you pay for this phone.

It was hawei cost around r5000

“I will give you r1000 for this”

Me: What that day light robbery

“That what I am willing to pay now girly”

Me: No give it back I will make another plan

The newspaper guy removed the newspaper from his eyes just when I was about to step out.

“Sorry you a job”

I turned and look at him.

“You want a job or not?”

He in Nigerian and we all have heard bad news about Nigerians and human trafficking.

Me: What kind of a job?

“Delivery”

Me: What will I be delivering?

“Small passage”

I looked at his and thought to myself, drugs. Can I do it? Can I deliver them? it shouldn't be hard.

Me: Tell me more

He smile

“Follow me”

Oh boy what have I gotten myself into? I think I just signed my soul to a devil.

BLADE

I was at the club; it was time I took care of my Shane for wanting me dead. I walked into a room where he was kept tied on a bed lucky him unlike Amour he was being fed and he had water too. I took a chair and my surgery scissors and settles next to him.

Me: Brother

Shane: Please brother I am sorry ...please

He pleaded

Me: I am going to cut off your twenty fingers for twenty days, so every day I will come here to cut your fingers and I will have your fingers roasted then you will have them for dinner every fucking day.

Shane: Brother please ... I am sorry. We are all we have in this world just you and me please

Me: Then after twenty days I will cut off your dick, followed umm your eyes then I will decide where I want you to leave or die.

I wanted him to feel so much pain that he would pray for death to take him, I thought I would let Amour kill him but I realised death would be too easy for him and besides I have other plans for amour now. He started crying as I put on the plastic apron with a mask and hand gloves then took the scissor to cut him.

Shane: Please brother please

I held his pink finger from his cuffed hands and started cutting it, he cried so much that he even had hiccups, the moment the finger was cut off blood gushed out, his screams echoed the whole room. I took off all these bloody messy things I was wearing and left him screaming, as I leave the room a nurse to who was going to stop the bleeding walked in, the last thing I want is him bleeding to death, it still too early for that.

One finger down, nineteen days left.

TWENTY SIX

ZINHLE ZUNGU – TEDDY

Death, Why do we fear death so much when we are all going to die, why cry if someone dies cause as the matter of fact we all going to die. Whether it today, tomorrow or some other day but still we all going to die; whether we want to or not still we will die. What would it take for me to die? Why death can't come easy like I would just close my eyes and never open them again. As I lay on this smelly bed all I could think about was ways to die. Only if you just go on your knees and say God you can take me now, I am ready and I believe I have served my purpose in life that would make things easier for everyone. I haven't seen monster with beautiful eyes in two days, I haven't eaten in two days. The only thing I wake up with is a glass of water next to the bed at least I get water that better isn't. Look at me being grateful for water, water people! I never knew life could ever humble me like this.

I sigh loudly.

I have been holding my shit for two days but I can tell today is thee day, today I won't be able to hold it anymore. I have shouted for him but he just never came and right now at this moment I know I will shit myself. How would I sleep in a messy poo bed? I used my one hand to lift up the dress, and then used my teeth to tear the lower part of the dress. It me a while to tore it apart when I was done the dress was left short, I pushed down the tore dress taking it off with my feet then tried to reach for it when I got it I laid it nicely beside me on the wet side of the bed. Taking a deep sigh I moved to that side and used my cuffed hand to balance on the headboard then used the other arm to lift myself up then I realised myself. Even if it your shit it still smells so mad and unbearable. I took the shit till was satisfied, I slowly balancing myself with just my feet and the hand that is cuffed I used the corner of the dress to wipe myself clean before shifting to the right side of the bed, with my hand I wrapped that shit with the dress and threw it on the floor.

I lay back on the bed disgust and ashamed.

As much as I tried holding the tears back I couldn't any more. They gushed out like waterfall, I let it all out as I scream my lugs out not because I am in physical

pain but because I feel so useless like everything I stand for has been ripped off me, that moment there I knew I have no say whatsoever on my life any more, he owns me. I am his property. As the realisation click in I felt my heart pounding hard, I felt so suffocated and all I couldn't see anything as it all turned blur. I started struggling with my breathing. I tried to do a breathing in and out technic but I failed dismally as my body started burning up then I became dizzy.

BLADE

I washed for a while thinking she's faking it but the more she tried breathing the more she seemed to not able to breath, is she having another panic attack.

Shit! Probably

I ran towards her room and barge in the whole room smell like shit and the smell wasn't pleasant at all but that not what captured me, she did. There she was with her eyes slowly turning back to their socket and her still trying to breath, I jump to her and undid the cuff on her hand as I carry her out of the room.

Me: Breath in and out slowly

I carried her all the way outside where fresh cold breezy hit her nicely calming her; she started breathing in and out slowly and calm. I was still carrying her as she tries to normalise her breathing. She lay her head on my abs and just stayed like that for a while, none of us said anything for quite some time as we were lost to own chain of thought. She was calm now and I had an eager to just drop her off on the ground so without thinking twice I dropped her off and she fell on her ass.

Amour: Ouch!

She said and just lay the watching the moon, it was already evening. She must be grateful for her attack that led her to seeing a moon, to feeling the fresh breezy outside.

Me: You shit yourself so you stink

I was expecting a comeback but she just lay there and watched the moon, tears started gushing out yet she wasn't screaming like back in a room when

she cried river. This time she just lay there and let the tears to stream down by the corners of his eyes, watching her breaking slowly but surely gave me satisfaction. Right there and then I knew it slowly sinking in to her. Slowly she lifted her bruised wrist and started rubbing it then she started laughing so loud confusing me af! Her loud laughter slowly turned into sobs. Now I am standing there looking down on her confused as fuck! Just maybe I don't understand women the way I thought I do because right in front of me is one crazy motherfucking confusing woman I have ever met.

Amour: You hate women don't you?

She asked an obvious question which I didn't respond.

Amour: I never thought I would appreciate seeing a moon like this before.

She wiped off her tears.

Amour: Worthless ...so worthless.

Me: At least we can agree on one thing, add useless too

Amour: I wonder what did the woman that screwed you over did to you

She lay there for a while not saying anything. Then she took a deep breath and shocked me one more time.

Amour: I am ready to go inside master, thank you for giving me fresh air.

She shifted her eyes from the moon to look at me but when our eyes met she quickly looked away.

Amour: I would also like to freshen up and clean my room if that okay with you master.

She sounds too good to be true. I will grant her those entire things only for her to turn and bite me like last time.

Me: No

Amour: Okay master.

She stood up but she was too week due to not eat so she fell back on the ground.

Me: On your knees then crawl inside.

She didn't give me a hustle she just started crawling inside with me following behind her, for some wicked reason I wanted to kick her ass because I can but I decided against it.

Now that I got her where I wanted her I will be able to move to more exciting part, it might be time to feed her since I need her strong and so ready for this most exciting part of training a submissive. She crawl all the way back to her stinking room, the smell was really too much now but I still cuffed her there and locked her in then left. I went to run a bubble bath for her she might as

well clean that room before the whole house stinks after I was done I took cleaning kit and a bucket full of water then went to her room.

Me: Clean when you done you will bath

Amour: Thank you master.

I literally felt my dick stiffening to the sound of that, hold on boy hang in there it about to go down just hang in there. I unlocked the cuff around her wrist and left her there to clean. I was risking it I wanted to see what would be her first move for the taste of this little no cuffs freedom I am giving her. I sat in a balcony and washed her through the tablet as she clean and deposed everything in a trash plastic bag.

TWENTY SEVEN

ZINHLE ZUNGU – TEDDY

I am clean bath and so fresh, my prison cell is squeaky clean and smells heavenly thank to his cleaning product even got a change of bedding and boy I am not even cuffed no more. All I am hopping for now from the master is food. I sat on top of my bed and tried to comb my afro hair in a nice neat way, the master seems to be obsessed with white long dresses as I am in another white ankle long summer dress and barefooted. I manage to comb my hair nicely then lay on the bed staring at the ceiling while crossing my fingers hoping and praying I get food.

The door opened and in he walked.

Him: Amour

Me: Yes master

Him: Food is ready

I felt my heart jumping out of it rib cage with joy.

Me: Thank you master

I got off the bed and went on my knees

Him: Rule number five, if I come in your room you go on your knees.

Me: Yes master

Him: Good dog.

He came towards me and chained my neck like his good dog I obeyed. He led the way to the kitchen by the dining table next to a chair was a bowl of green salad waiting for me.

Him: Eat amour

Me: Thank you master for the food.

I kneel like a dog and started eating, this is what he was seeing an obeying me but deep down I wanted to stab him with the fork he is using. I wanted to see him bleed to death

I ate my food as quietly as I could then when I was done I bow down and waited for instructions from the master. My mind was busy calculating. I maybe just maybe I can out smart him, just maybe I can actually get hold of that fork and stab him with it but for once in my life I decided not to play hero as yet, I decided to build trust and strategize my plan very well before I strike. I

remain there kneeling till he was done eating; he poured water from a tab and gave me a glass.

Me: Thank you master

From the angle I was on, kneeling and not able to look him in the eyes all I could look at was his dick print showing on his sweat pants. I drink the water then hand back the glass.

Him: Wash the dishes

Me: Yes master

I rose up and collected all the dirty dishes to be washed. I walk past him without looking at his eyes; I washed wiped the dishes and placed them accordingly before I retired to my room. To plan I saw where he store the kitchen knives, maybe I should start by getting the knife first then, then I will see what would be next. That evening I slept with a plan and little hope for the freedom.

That early morning I was woken up by him taking a blanket off me, I jump up almost knocking him off with my fist but I held it back I can't afford to make any set back now. He is slowly learning to let loose and trust me. I got off the bed and knee before him. Look at me kneeling before a fucking asshole of all assholes, argh I am not there I don't wanna speak negative of him because I know damn well I will end up blabbing and telling him where to get off.

Him: Wear these we going for a jog

Me: Yes master.

I put on a sweat pants with a vest and running shoes we then left, the house we in is made of stones surrounded by trees and a big dam, I can't see any other houses so I am assuming it is in a middle of nowhere between some forest. How the fuck am I going to escape this robberrn island?

Him: Looking for something?

We were jogging in between trees on a small car route and ever since we left the house I have been looking around. His question bought me back to the now, the now that I am facing will figure out how I am going to leave this prison later.

Me: No master, just loving the calmness that comes with nature.

He chuckled and kept on running

For a moment there I thought what if he can see right through me, what if he can tell that I am actually pretending. Maybe just maybe I should bring the

crazy bitch in me just a little just so I won't look so perfect in this submissive thing. With that thought in mind I increased my running speed.

Me: Catch me if you can

I said giggling then started running so fast.

Him: What the fuck!

He ran after me, if you ever saw a springbok running; that was exactly me as I ran so fast in a way that I felt my lungs closing in on me but the guy was just right on my track, right behind me. I bent over and put my hands on my knees as I try to catch my breath.

Me: Ever thought of entering for a marathon cause boy damn you can run. He just stood before and watched me. I rose up and looked at him right in those beautiful eyes of his.

Him: You have been breaking the rules amour.

He said it more like a warning.

Me: You never said the rules apply outside the house.

He looked at me in disbelief then he chuckles and looked away.

Me: Well come on now let see who will reach the lake first.

I said as I look at the lake that wasn't so far from us, before he could turn to check or say anything I was already running towards there. I ran as fast as I could but by the time we both reach the lake together at a same time. I quickly bent over and started to wash my face.

Me: That wasn't bad I did kick your ass

He gave me a laze yet cute look as he breath heavy then shook his head sideways.

Me: What? I got here first; I did kick your ass.

I walked away towards a tree where I sat down under the tree.

Him: Let me put this straight for as long as I am beside you I am your master, whether inside or outside.

Me: Oh come on live a little you can't be a master inside and outside I also need to breathe you can be so suffocating.

His hands went straight to his waist as he stood there watching me.

Me: Okay, okay let make a deal. You want me to be submissive and being submissive is not really my thing but since I can tell I have no way out of this robben island let compromise.

Him: Robben island?

Me: Yes I think I would need a bout to escape this place which I don't have but I have a proposal if I am going to live in this place for god knows how many years boy we both have to compromise some few things.

Him: Umm ...

He walked up to me and sat beside me.

Him: What are you proposing smart ass?

Me: I will be submissive inside the house, I will do everything you want me to do but outside the house I am free, I can do any shit I want to do.

He just sat there and stares at me.

Me: And boy I would love to have some picnic here, this is so perfect for a picnic.

Him: I will only agree to your proposal if and only if by outside you mean during the jogging only

Me: What? Come on

Him: It either that or I suffocate you wherever we go

I groaned a little, okay I must not push my luck at least he is giving me a smell of freedom.

Me: Okay deal

I put out my hand for a hand shake; he took it on his firm hand and shakes it.

Him: You shake like a man

Me: Oh my god, you say what?

He laughed as he stood up.

Him: I'm kidding

I clap my hands.

Me: Yey give it up to Trevor Noah the second he can make jokes people

He chuckled.

Him: Let bounce woman

I took a deep breath and stare at the far end of the lake looking at how the birds were free flying to wherever they wanted to go. I wish I had wings

TWENTY EIGHT

ZINHLE ZUNGU – TEDDY

The moment we got back inside he held me with my neck and pressed me against a wall. We were both so sweaty; his lips crashed with mine as he forcefully kissed me. I didn't kiss him back I just stood there still pressed against the wall with my neck; his lips were salty due to sweat. He bite on my bottom lip gentle and I kissed him back we were both breathing heavy due to the jog and now the kissing. My mind wasn't on the kiss though all I could think about is what I am doing with this guy. He pressed me harder on the wall with his knee pressed between my thighs. I sigh through the kissing and just let nature take its course, I close shut my eyes and zoned out, his kisses were so smooth and perfect, and they were exactly like how he made me feel on my dreams. His stone hard dick was pressed on my stomach and boy did he kiss me. It felt so good in a way that I started grinding on his knee just to smooth the itch between my thighs, my hands find their way under his t-shirt I wanted to feel his abs I wanted to feel his skin against mine, my mind was literally blocked all I could think about is him between my thighs smoothing the itching that I am busy feeling. He smiles in between the kiss before taking both my hands and press them against the wall, I tilted my head back and kept grinding on his knee, sweat was busy dripping all over my body, his lips got in contact with my neck, he suck gentle I couldn't help but moan, he pressed his dick against my stomach then his mouth moved up to my ear all the way back to mouth then he let go of my hands and I wrapped them around his neck as I jump up to wrap my legs around his waist, his dick came in contact with my pussy, I swear I literally came everything was just too steamy and hot. I did feel my cum dripping down my pussy, his hands were grabbing my ass really tight but god damn it felt so good. Out of that steam session we were busy having he placed me on top of the kitchen counter and moved away from me.

Him: Go bath

I was left with my mouth half open breaking rule number two staring him right on his eyes which had shrink and turned to be small but still the most beautiful brown eyes I have laid my eyes on. He licked his lips with a cute smile on his face.

Him: Oh amour you just broke rule number two

Me: What you gonna do about it?

My voice came as a whisper.

Him: Go bath you should see, actually you have broken two rules. Number two and number three, I just told you twice to go bath.

I gave him a sly smile as I slide off the kitchen counter.

Me: I apologise master.

I said walking away in a seductive manner, he spanks my ass really hard and it actually hurt a little too bad I couldn't turn and see his face expression after that spank.

You know what they say about the forbidden no matter how much you try to stay away from the forbidden it just never happen, the more you resist the forbidden the more eager you get. Forbidden is totally the worse thing ever. It could be the end of you, death even. As my mind is busy in train of thought of how good it felt when he held me with his strong arms, my hand has find its way down my clit rubbing slowly while thinking about him, my eyes are closed and I am laying on the bath sink. Touching myself wasn't even close to how he makes me feel. I took a frustrated sigh and finished bathing then wore a white dress I found waiting on me. From there I went straight to my room where I found him sitting on top of my bed, I went on my knees same time.

Him: Breakfast is ready

He walked up to me and put the chain around my neck god knows how much I actually hate him for this he sure do knows how to make a person feel so inferior, As usual my plate of food was on the floor where I kneeled and started eating. After my breakfast he led me back to my room where he took off the dress I was wearing leaving me butt naked.

Him: Bend over with your ass all out.

My heart was pounding hard as I kneel so I will bend right on the cold tiles but they were really comfortable as my whole body was in flames. He grabbed a pillow and put it under my head so I would lie on it and give him my ass. For some weird reasons I wasn't worried about nor ashamed about my body, maybe I just got too much confident but I was damn so comfortable with my body. he took off his tekkies and walked bare footed towards the wardrobe where he took out a suitcase and place it on the bed, since I was facing the other way I couldn't see what was inside the suitcase all I felt was him lifting me up then he stare at my eyes for a moment before putting on a blind fond, now I couldn't see but I could feel, he moved from me then move back as he lift my chin up.

Him: Open your mouth wide

I swallowed some saliva before opening my mouth wide; he forcefully put a ganging ball inside my mouth. I won't be able to make any sound even if I wanted too. He gently placed me back on the pillow.

Him: Ass up amour

For a moment there I wondered if him and I were always liked this before I lost my memory, do we use to fuck like this. Is he a sadist or just into kinky fucking. Did I ever cheated on Lumka with this guy? He pushed my back down so it would touch the floor then made my ass to go up and all exposed, he part my legs with his hands positioning me the way he wanted me. My hands were balancing me making sure that I lose balance. I felt him moving away from me. He rubs my ass with his hands slowly and in circles. I swear wasn't ready for a whip that landed on my ass making me lose my balance and made a sound that couldn't come out.

Him: Ass up face down

I breathe through my nose as I try to calm my pounding heart then bend again. Ass up face down, my ass was burning so fucking burning that I had no doubt I won't be able to sit for weeks. Again he whipped me this time I didn't full lose my balance as I was anticipating the whip. He positioned me again parting my legs as I was closing them. He brushed the whip against my ass making me shiver. He whipped me again and again. No tears came out, I was not going to cry as much as my ass cheek were burning and actually so fucking painful I still held back the tears. He gave me ten whips before dropping the whip and held my ass cheek with both his hands while groaning. Did I say I won't cry? Fuck that shit, this whipping ish is fucking painful by the time he reached ten I let my tears stream down. He held on my ass, grabbing and squeezing it hard. I heard some shuffling as he took off his pants; my pounding heart was scared of whether he will use a condom? Is he even clean? I wasn't worried about pregnancy since I am on pill I was worried about him infecting me with diseases. I felt his member rubbing on my ass cheeks he grab them, his dick head rub on my entrance, I was wet so damn wet. He groaned before inserting himself slowly in, I gags as I felt it stretching me wide. He slide out then in, out and in slowly for several times, whenever he slid back in I felt like he is poking my womb. His hand grabbed my waist tight as he start to pound in me like a lunatic. His grip on my waist was strong and painful; he pounded in and out

showing no mercy. It felt good but painful, I squirted so hard that I felt my own body shaking but the guy just held me on my waist and lifted me up as I lost contact, there is nothing much I could do since he was in between my legs and holding me down. All I could do is balance myself with my hands so I wouldn't fall and lose my teeth.

TWENTY NINE

ZINHLE ZUNGU – TEDDY

No one ever told me that being a prisoner comes with depression, I was never told you become a prisoner even when you are not guilty and I was most definitely never told when you are a prisoner you get fucked everyday whether you want to be fucked or not and it not making love it fucking, being fucked like a fucking hoe. I have been here for days now or it probably months, God I don't even know what day is it today. All I do in this house is jog every morning with him then be fucked at any time when he feels like fucking me whether it in a middle of the night he still fuck me. The only time I can actually breathe and tell him fuck you without worrying about punishment is when we are jogging. Just like now, we jog every day. And I actually love it when we jogging since I can be free. I jog all the way to my favourite tree by the lake and lay down under the tree; he came and sat beside me. My escape plan would work if he didn't have cameras installed in my rooms, so I really can't hide any weapons since he would see me but one of these days I will hit him so hard that he would blank out and I would run for my life.

Him: What so special about this tree? You always lie under it.

I closed my eyes to get rid of the thought I was busy having then opened them again only to find him staring at me.

Me: Lie down so I would tell you all about it.

I patted beside me for him to lie, he lie down and stare at me. We stare at each for quite some time without saying anything. Is it weird to think perhaps our eyes connect more than anything? I blink and broke the stare then looked up at the tree leaves.

Me: it gives me peace

Him: There are lot of trees here that could give you same thing.

Me: Not like how this tree makes me feel at home, maybe it knowing I can be free under this tree without being treated like a prisoner.

Him: Umm ... I see

Me: It makes me wonder how my life before this was; it makes me wish I knew who I was. At least maybe I would've known how I got myself here or how I landed on your bad side.

I could feel his intense stare as I wasn't facing him.

Me: It makes me wonder if they miss me at all, if my fiancé, my sister or my mother even cares about me. Did they even try looking for me?

He still looked at me clearly confused.

Me: no minute pass by without me thinking who I am? Without thinking who you are? What did I ever do to you? Did I break your heart? Are you my jealous lover? Did I choose Lumka over you? Are you obsessed with me? What did I ever do to you for you to hate me like this? Just maybe, maybe if I knew I would try to make things right by you? Maybe I could try to change the past.

I sigh and blinked back the tears; I turned to look at him. His eyebrows were brought together then our eyes locked and I blunted it out.

Me: I lost my memory, apparently I rolled down a stairs and hit my head hard then I lost my memory. You know what doesn't make sense now that I think about it, is the gun wound on my thigh that I woke up in hospital with.

Him: You suffering from amnesia?

Me: and it is frustrating the shit out of me.

He went quite for a while.

Him: You don't remember anything, anything at all.

Me: I use to dream about you but it was brief other than that I don't remember anything concerning you

He was quiet for a while just starring at me.

Him: We should hand back, I have business associate coming over today and you will entertain them.

He said standing up to jog back.

Me: What you pimping me?

Him: Yes now off we go

Me: You not gonna tell me who are you?

Him: No

He said so impatiently. I didn't have a choice I stood up rolling my eyes.

Me: Wait, do you have a knife with you?

He stares at me.

Me: I won't stab you, at least not yet.

From his sweater pocket he took out knife and handed it to me. I took it and walked to the tree and wrote "Teddy was here"

He chuckled as I hand him back the knife, he took it and below my writing he wrote. "Blade was here"

Me: Blade!

He's Blade, I kept repeating it on my mind as we jog back.

Blade!

The moment we got back at Robben Island we stretch then I took a bath and he locked in my room. Leaving me in train of thought, now I am going to be

pimped. I am a fucking prostitute all this pain he has been putting me through he was actually training me so he would fucking pimp me.

I am a fucking prostitute, the realisation hit hard.

BLADE

There was a knock on my door then my right hand guy walked in.

Him: I have all the information you requested.

Me: Good

He handed me a file then walked out.

I was back in the city since today it day 20 for Shane. I took the file and page it, it contains information about amour and her medical report from the hospital she was in back in the village. I paged it and it indeed confirmed that she suffered amnesia after fall and hitting her head. Damn so all along she pretended she knew who I was, this should be more fun. Now that I am putting two and two together she dumps that pussy guy from the village. Their video went viral when she turned down his proposal.

Knock!

Me: Yes

“It ready sir”

Me: Good.

I left the file on top of the table and walked to where Shane was being kept, we had to put an oxygen mask on him since he was slowly but surely losing it. I made sure he stays alive with no fingers.

Me: Brother, it smells good in here.

I had a chef prepare stake for me and his last finger for him. I settled next to him, our plate were on a small table right beside him.

Me: Let me help you up.

I helped him out and took off the oxygen mask.

Me: You should be excited; I even bought us brandy to celebrate your last day.

I took the finger and forcefully fed him, at first he used to gang up but I would hit him now he has learn to take it like a pro and eat it till it meat free only a bone left.

Me: Should I be worried, the way you eat yourself you making me think one of these days you will kill a human just to feed your cravings.

CONSEQUENCES –HATING HIM! BREAKING HER!

He was busy shaking but not crying, you could see the hate he had for me but I still cared less. He fucked with me so he must face the consequences just like how amour is going to face the consequences for fucking with my business.

THIRTY

ZINHLE ZUNGU – TEDDY

He came and opened my door like a good dog that I am I went on my knees; a lady was following behind him with a cosmetic bag.

Him: Go take a shower Jenifer will do your make up.

The Jenifer lady walks and sat on my bed while I stood up to shower. Make up for fucking what? To pimp me out, he has no shame no shame at all. I took my time in the shower thinking of ways I could murder him.

Him: You have ten minutes to leave that room

I silently groan before stepping out and drying myself then made my way back to my prison cell. He was sitting on the chair watching everything as the makeup lady did my face; I even hate this makeup shit. From my face she moved to my hair and comb it nicely then made me wore a fucking wig, I sure do look like a slut, a fucking prostitute. He made me wear a thong a fucking thong only, he is sick he is fucking sick.

His business associate as he calls them are sitting on the table, there are three of them then by the door is another three guys, bodyguard. I am to serve them whatever they want. Already I fell like throwing up as I serve those drinks but I manage to keep my head held high. This other old fat pig is busy fucking undressing the thong off with his eyes and there's nothing I want more than taking his eyes out right at this moment. I placed their drinks on the table; I am wearing some ridiculous high heels that I could even fall on my face.

Me: Will there be anything else Master?

I said with a little bit of attitude in between and he gave me a warning look before he respond.

Him: No that will be all for now, go and kneel over there

He pointed by the balcony entrance. He got to be kidding I am to kneel in front of these assholes and him as the master of assholes. I didn't move as yet as I stare at his eyes breaking the rule number two and probably three.

"I like her attitude"

The old fat pig said with a nasty laugh then took a sip of his drink then licked his lips in a most nasty way. I felt so disgust and I gave him the disgust look.

"Blade I want her, how much for her"

I was definitely being tasted here before Blade could answer the motherfucking cow spark my ass, he fucking spark my fucking ass. Oh damn he doesn't know me well. I grab his arm and twisted it then pushed him face flat on the table.

Me: Touch me again and I will chop off your fucking small dick.

The bodyguards were right on me in a blink of an eye grabbing me rough, I turned and kicked the other one on his balls the other two held me back.

“You fucking bitch”

He stood up, the other two men on the table just sat there and sipped on their drinks watching the whole thing unfolds, I couldn't see Blade as my back was on him but I bet he is also just sitting there doing nothing. Maybe even hoping they kill me before he does.

I spat saliva on his face.

Me: You disgust me

He tried slapping me but someone held his hand and that someone is no other than Blade himself.

Blade: I suggest you leave my premises

He said with a straight face looking at the fucking asshole.

“What you going to let this worthless bitch disrespect me”

Blade: As far as I am concern you were disrespecting me, touching my property without my permission so leave before I throw you and your dogs out myself.

With veins popping and an angry stormy face he looked Blade in the eyes.

“This is not over”

Blade: Leave

“You fucking messing with the wrong person Blade”

Blade: Zakes get the fuck out

“So you are willing to kick me out for this worthless bitch?”

Blade: Okay last warning

“No last warning to you, I am coming for her and for you”

He said and started walking away, the three bodyguards followed after him.

“Look Blade I don't think I will be needing girls from you or will be doing any business with you till you and Zakes solved your problems”

One of the guys said standing up.

“Me either Zakes is crazy man, there is no knowing what he will do about this”

The second one said gulping down the rest of his drink.

“You should have let him have her”

He said before following his partner out. I remained standing there with my back on him. I didn't know what I will find if I ever turned.

Blade: Go to your room

I didn't move I just stood there for a moment then turned to stare at him, he had his hands inside his pocket.

Me: What do you think he will do?

He didn't respond, instead of responding he slapped me hard across my face then dragged me to my cell with my hair. He threw me inside and locked.

Me: Fuck you! I hope he comes back and kill you maybe then I will be free.

I cussed after him as he locked the door; I grab a dress and wore it then just lay there on the bed.

THIRTY ONE

ZINHLE ZUNGU – TEDDY

I hardly sleep during the night because I am always looking forward into going for a morning jog, where I could be free and get breath of fresh air. As I lay on the bed I am in deep thought thinking about all the things I could get up to if I was free. Thinking about how I want to fucking kill Blade. I had all kind of thought going through my mind which were sadly disturb by a sound of gun shot outside, I jump off the bed and went to try to open the door but it locked and the gun shot were real loud and getting closer. My thought went to the window; I was not going to die in this house so I ran there and ripped off the cardboard covering the window. Opening the window I realised there was no way out as it had burgle guard. I had to stop and think the gun shot were still loud outside.

I ran to the wardrobe which had only white long dresses and a suitcase. Lucky the suitcase wasn't locked with my panicking hands I opened the suit case it had all those kinky fucking things; the robes, hand cuffs, chokers, blind folds, gang balls, all size of dildos and whips.

Me: Son of a disgusting bitch

I went through them all trying to figure out what I could use to break through the door. I took one of the handcuffs and tried opening the door using it but there was a loud explosion on the other side which made me jump a mitre away from the door. The explosion wasn't on my door but I felt the ground shaking and I just knew shit was happening on the other side. I paced up and down as I started hearing more voices. I switch off the light took the handcuff and stood behind the door, waited impatiently for anyone to enter.

There were footsteps followed by a key click then the door opened, whoever was poke his big head first while he had a gun on the other hand, I quickly handcuffed the hand with the gun, the gun fell and I pushed the door hard to shut it. He backed away as the door hit his forehead leaving his handcuffed hand inside; I pushed the door shut pressing his hard on the frames. He screamed in agony, I opened the door then slammed it again and again making sure I break his wrist. The moment I opened the door wide he tried reaching for his almost broken fingers and wrist that when I got a chance to kick his

stomach making bed over. His screams were alerting the others as I heard one of them shout.

“Go get the bitch”

I pushed him till he hit his head on the wall behind him really hard, I left him there and slide into the bathroom closing and locking myself inside. I heard footsteps, I stayed pressed on the door taking a deep breath.

“What the fuck, Mzwezwe! Mzwezwe fuck! Mamba the bitch escaped and she hit Mzwezwe, he’s bleeding to death”

I couldn’t hear the other person’s response since he was far around the lounge or probably kitchen.

“I am checking”

He tried opening the bathroom door but obviously found it locked and I knew I had to come up with a plan.

My eyes landed on the bathroom windows and I realised I could never use them since they are too small.

Taking in and out breath while my eyes roomed around checking what I could use they settled on the bathroom cabinet which I jog towards them, forcefully tried to break the drawers as I force them out, once I managed to get them out I break them on the floor into pieces. The long dress was disturbing me so I had to rip the lower part to be shorter. I used one of the drawers to break the long length mirror, the other guy on the door was busy trying to break in so between me panicking and breaking the mirror I ended up accidentally cutting myself.

Me: Fuck!

I got the pieces of the mirror, tied them with the rag of the dress and made a huge knot of broken mirrors. The door was slowly opening; i took two cabinets drawers and placed them not far from the door so I would trip him. I took some of the drawer pieces including the broken glasses tied on the dress rag and stood behind the door next to the light switcher. The moment he breaks in I will switch off the light.

“Just shoot the damn door!”

“Chill it opening”

Indeed he hit it for few time then it broke through almost hitting me, I quickly switch off the light. He tripped on the drawers as expected and I wasted no time I hit his head, face and everything I could hit with the dress rag wrapped with glasses.

“Fuck this fucking bitch”

I hit him hard even on his face and ears.

“Drop that fucking shit bitch and raise your hands”

Someone said behind me with a gun on my head and I cussed not turning to him I raised my hand with the rag slowly since it was dark he couldn't see the piece of the broken drawer on my hand. I pushed my other had with the drawer hard stabbing him on the stomach, I bend over the gun shot went off and he accidentally shot his partner who was trying to stand up from the drawers that tripped him. The guy behind me bends over holding his stomach that was gushing blood. I pushed him as I ran past him towards my room or rather the cell. I didn't know how many people were in this house so far I saw three, well the other one is dead so I'm left with two. I had to get that gun that fell from the first guy.

My pounding heart and the rush of adrenaline were a proof of it about to get down in this house; in all this shit happening I am hopping I will be able to escape.

THIRTY TWO

ZINHLE ZUNGU – TEDDY

Like a soldier in a war I was fighting for survival, I had managed to get hold of the gun the other guy dropped. I stood behind the door while it was half open. The guy that I stab on the stomach walked out of the bathroom from the passenger light I could tell he was bleeding but not that much; I unlock the safety from the gun and aimed at him. I shot him and he fell back I ran out of the room towards the kitchen/lounge but more voices were outside and the door was exploded. I checked the bullet on the gun and was left with only one so I had to improvise if I wanted to survive. I hurried to the stove and poured a whole 5litre of oil on a pot then placed it on the stove and switched it on. I rushed to peak how many people I am dealing but I could only see two guys who were standing by a car smoking not even aware that I just killed their other mate.

I walked back to the stove and the oil was slowly getting hot, good I will need it to boil. Looking around the kitchen for the next thing to use, what could it be other than knives? They were busy talking and laughing to what I didn't even know.

“Where are these moroons now?”

The other guy asked after a while even my oil was already boiling.

The other one chuckled.

“Probably fucking the bitch first, I heard she is fire”

“Bastard let me check on them”

He said walking away.

I grab the pot of oil with a clothing and stood by the exploded door as the other guy made his way inside, the light were off inside which was even more great, they were only on outside. He spit some saliva on the ground before walking in and I quickly poured the oil on his face, he screamed holding his face and the other guy outside was alerted he quickly ran towards the door not knowing I was ready for him by the time he reach the door busy asking his friend what happened. Who was busy knocking himself on every material in the house screaming. I pointed a gun on him.

Me: Drop the damn gun

While I was pouring the oil on that guy I did pour some on my feet and it was burning up but who cares about that when their survival instincts are up.

Me: I said drop the damn gun and raise your hands where I can see them
He slowly dropped the gun.

“What do you think you are doing bitch”

Me: Well I would say pointing you with the gun but the plan is to kill you.
I press the trigger and his blood got all over me. Quickly I got his gun and shot the guy with a burned face who was still crying.

I ran out towards their car tip toed around checking if there was anyone, it was empty so I got in and search for the keys sadly there were no keys.

Me: Fuck!

Not far from the house, near the dam I saw some light and some human figures. I checked the gun and it had only two bullets I believe they would do and beside I still have the two knives I took at the kitchen. I got off the car and tip toed towards there. I could feel pain where I have been hurt but ignored it and jog towards there hiding with trees. It was Zakes the disgusting pig and Blade.

Me: Oh shit

Zakes and his two guys had Blade tied on a tree and Zakes was busy talking and laughing a very nasty creepy laugh. I neared there hiding by the trees just to hear what they saying maybe I could even get car keys.

Zakes: The problem is you picked a fight with a wrong guy

Blade: You talk a lot why don't you get over it

Zakes laughed.

Zakes: No since you seem to care about that bitch I want me and my boys to fuck her right in front of you taking turns.

Blade chuckled.

Blade: Oh well I would love to see you try and fail dismally.

Zakes laugh again.

Zakes: What you going to do? I have you by the balls.

Blade: Oh trust me I will sit here and enjoy everything unfolds

He said with a cocky voice and attitude. Zakes check his time.

Zakes: What the fuck is taking them so long?

Blade laughed out loud.

Blade: Your guys are probably all dead now.

Zakes: Go check on them, bring that bitch here.

Some guy walked away coming towards me since I am wearing a very white dress in dark for sure he would see me so I had no choice but to take it off and tried to hid it with body while I am pressed on the tree till the guy walked passed me. I was left only in a thong that he had me wear earlier on. I took a deep sigh and tied the dress on the tree then climbed up the tree, with the gun and the knives, I had to hold the knives with my mouth then the gun was on my boobs.

Zakes: I am going to tech her lesson she will never forget then I will personally kill you.

Blade was helpless and I had a choice, either I walk away right now and run for my life or I save his pathetic life. Looking back all the pain he has put me through there is nothing more than I wanted to see him dead.

Why save him when he fucked up my life?

THIRTY THREE

ZINHLE ZUNGU – TEDDY

“Boss what is that white thing there by the tree?”

I was on top of the tree, half naked or naked well I was wearing a thong and a bra so that being naked as far as I am concern.

Zakes: Go check it out

He said to his boy as they try to figure out what is it. Blade’s loud voice roared into loud laughter. The guy who apparently went to get me inside came back running passing by me.

“She is not there, and the others are either dead or still bleeding to death”

He said addressing his boss.

Zakes: What the fuck do you mean? All five of them?

“Ye ... yea man it a mess and that house is full of dead bodies”

Zakes: Who else in that house?

The question was directed to Blade.

Blade: Oh it just her, all alone.

“Sir the white thing on the tree is moving”

Thanks to the wind the dress tied on the tree was busy moving.

Zakes: Didn’t I say go check it out.

He shouts.

The guy took a light walking slowly towards the tree while looking around. I had stab a knife on the tree, one knife on my hand and the gun hanged on my thong, I hang in a tree facing down with my legs wrapped on the tree branch. He walked towards the tree checking.

“It a dress tied on the tree”

He shouted

Zakes: What the fuck that thing wasn’t there.

Blade: And now she is going to kill you.

The guy looked up the tree with his light, I throw the knife at him aiming for his heart but the knife landed on his eye and he started screaming I had to jump down from the tree and the gun fell.

Zakes: What is it?

“Someone stub me”

He screamed so loudly.

Zakes: Go check what going on over there.

He instructed the other guy.

I tried looking for the gun but couldn't find it in the dark and the other guy was getting near so I ran and hid with another tree.

"Shit man you have to take it out"

He kept screaming rolling on the ground. I had no weapons with me, no gun or knife.

Zakes: Come out bitch or I kill him

Oh please do, if you don't I will be the one killing him.

I stayed press on the tree as the guy kept looking around; he was so near the tree I was hiding at. If it wasn't dark I'm sure he was going to see me, I rounded the tree as he came to my view, his eyes were everywhere checking all the trees once he was in front of me I jump for his neck we both fell on the ground, I tried hitting his head in the ground but he was strong and fast he flipped me over my other hand landed on a stone, I grabbed it. He pointed at me with the gun, not knowing I have a stone with me.

"Bitch I got you"

Me: Oh yea

I hit his head on the right side hard then quickly flipped him over and grab his gun, blood was busy coming out that I even doubted he will survive.

Me: Now who got who?

He tried grabbing me but was too in pain.

Zakes: What going on over there Bhamuza?

I pressed on the trigger and shot him on his chest, my whole body was bath with human blood. I quickly moved away.

Zakes: Jesus Christ, Bhamuza? Oh God is there any ghost here, bitch show yourself or I kill him, I swear I will kill him.

I showed up right next to them, bath in blood and naked. His eyes popped out, I had a huge smile on my face.

Me: Boom! Got you

Zakes: What are you?

Me: Your worst nightmare

I said then laughed really loud.

Zakes: Put the fucking gun down or I kill him.

I laughed again slowly moving forward.

Me: let me see; he raped me, starves me to death, treated me like a dog and made me sleep on my own shit. Now the question is; do I care if you kill him?

I pretended to think then chuckled.

Me: I will even help you to kill him then kill you
I laughed loud.

Me: Isn't that great, two monsters dying at the same time
Zakes looked from me then Blade who was busy smirking obviously amused by something and that made me mad.

Me: Something amusing master?
I asked mockingly.

Blade: Seeing you in action turns me on amour

Me: Oh look at you getting a boner even on gun pointed, I am so gonna enjoy watching you die.

Blade: I guess my dick will die happy.

Zakes was just standing next to Blade with a gun pointed at me, not knowing if he should shoot me first or Blade first and I didn't give him enough time to figure it out as I shot him on the shoulder, his gun fell.

Zakes: No! No wait let make a deal, I will give you money please don't kill me.

Me: I bet all the girls you buy to toy with beg you not to hurt them all the damn time.

Zakes: Please!

He had his hand on the shoulder where I had shot him.

Me: You so pathetic.

I shot him on the head and he fell back.

Me: Now who is next?

THIRTY FOUR

ZINHLE ZUNGU – TEDDY

The light shine through the window; it morning already, Last night after killing Zakes I went back inside the house and took a well-deserved bath then got some sleep leaving all the dead bodies outside, and I left Blade tied on the tree. Now it time for pay back, I woke up pretty much in a good mood. I had slept in his room which is big, fully furnished and his bed is so damn comfortable and it smells heavenly. I went to take a quick shower in his ensuite bathroom, used his bathing shampoo then wore his shirt that was too big for me exactly like a dress. From the wardrobe in my room I found few thongs I picked one and wore then took a gun, put on his sleepers went to the kitchen made myself a coffee, while humming a very nice song and moving my ass a little. I took my coffee and the gun and stepped outside, the dead bodies were outside the veranda where I have piled them last night.

Me: Umm

I said to myself as the fresh cold breezy hit me so nicely. If you wondering, no the dead bodies of assholes who wanted me dead don't bother me at all, go ahead and call me cruel. If it wasn't them lying like that dead it would've been me. I walked towards where Blade was tied; he was still there tied on the tree. He watched me as I walk up to him not even blinking a little bit. I stood in front of him and sipped on my coffee.

Me: Good morning, isn't this a good morning look at the birds singing. Oh man what a good morning it is.

He didn't say anything, he just watched me with his unreadable expression.

Me: Want some coffee?

Blade: No thank you amour.

Me: Oh too bad I thought you might like it.

I poured the rest coffee from my mug on his face, it was warm not hot. He gaps and cussed.

Me: Sorry you saying something?

Blade: What you doing amour?

He asked so calm.

Me: No, no start addressing me as your majesty

He chuckled.

Me: Now what are we going to do with all these dead bodies, since we had a slaughter party last night.

Blade: Well you see what you do with them your majesty
I could feel the sarcasm in his voice but chose to ignore it.

Me: Umm and as your majesty I am saying you are going to dig graves for all these dead bodies.

I laughed mockingly

Me: and we have about 20+ dead bodies, counting the ones I didn't kill. So it probably you who killed them before they got you and like your guardian angel I showed up and saved your life.

I laughed sweetly

Me: Life is so good here, let me see if I could find some spade for you to dig the graves. Chow! Chow see you

I blow a kiss on him and walked away.

Blade: My shirt looks good on you.

I turned and bow a little.

Me: Thank you, you so sweet.

He knew he was on my mercy and there was nothing he could do about it so it probably why he chose not to do anything at all.

I walked away towards the back of the house where there was a store room, I used to see it all the time when we went for jogs, I shot the locked door and walked in, it had all kinds of tools that he would need for digging, I took them out. before he start I need to make myself a huge yummy breakfast so I went inside the house and made a breakfast, four Russians, bacon, eggs, polony, toasted bread, grilled chicken and I took the whole jug of juice then went to the bed room and got the chain he use to use to chain my neck like a dog. From the storeroom I took a wheelbarrow which I used to carry all these things, including a camp chair I found at the storeroom.

Me: Hey master I am back, look what I got

I said showing him the tools. He was going to dig not far from where he was tied; the gun was in a wheelbarrow as I walked towards him with the chain.

Me: Well we have to make sure no funny business, right pet? Oh you such a good boy

I said brushing his head, I bent over and cuffed his one leg, the chain was long. I cuffed his leg into a tree. It was long enough for him to be able to work while cuffed, like a fucking jail bird that he is.

Me: Okay now I am going to untie you and you going to start digging right there.

He chuckled.

Blade: Did I tell you how hot you are when you take control.

Me: if you ever say any sexist shit to me ever again I am going to cut off your head, capish.

He nods his head while smirking.

Blade: Loud and clear amour

I took the gun and pointed it on his dick.

Me: You majesty

Blade: Oh yes your majesty.

I faked a smile and took out a knife from my bra then lean on him as I cut the rope behind him, I kissed bite his ear then I stepped back as he break free from the rope.

Me: You try any funny business, I shoot you.

He just stood there tall and gave me a look, making our eyes locked and my inside just melted.

Me: Now here are the tools get to work buddie.

I placed everything next to him.

I walked back to the wheelbarrow and flipped it, use it as a table as I sat my well-deserved breakfast then settled on the camp chair like a fucking BOSS because I am the fucking BOSS.

He chuckled when he saw my food but said nothing, good for him. I sat down and enjoyed my breakfast while he was busy digging.

Me: Umm life is so good

I lay back on the chair and relaxed.

THIRTY FIVE

ZINHLE ZUNGU – TEDDY

It day two he sleeps outside tied on the tree while I sleep inside a house with no door, but hey the girl is happy. I fucking enjoy everything, I eat whatever I wanna eat and I haven't fed him. I want him to feel how it likes to not eat. I stretch myself as I got off the bed, walked to the bathroom and freshen up so nicely then picked his shirt, I have even moved the underwear's to his room the girl was claiming his life and he was going to be me while I was him. After I was dressed I walked out of the bedroom busy dancing to music playing on my head.

Blade: You look happy

I froze on the spot, and then my mind quickly came back. He fucking escaped, how? He was fucking chained. There was nothing I could do; he was busy in the kitchen cooking while half naked only wearing an apron and trousers.

Me: What the fuck?

Blade: Morning amour, I made breakfast I hope you hungry.

I quickly ran back to the bedroom to get the gun but it wasn't there, where I had hid it last night. The gun was gone.

Me: Fuck! Fuck! No! no! no!

I walked back to him and he pointed on top of the kitchen counter.

Blade: Looking for that?

Me: How

Blade: Come and sit down so we would eat, the breakfast will get cold.

I just stood there frozen and fucking mad.

Me: I am not going to address you as master

Blade: and I am not going to address you as your mastery, I guess we even.

He said and kept on digging on his breakfast, the gun was on top of the kitchen counter far from him as he sat on the dining table next to him was my plate of breakfast.

Blade: Are you going to join me or what?

I looked from him to gun then back to him, I walked toward him slowly and settled on the chair opposite him making sure my eyes weren't leaving him, I took the food.

Me: You didn't poison me, did you?

He chuckled and tried taking some of my food but I quickly hit his hand.

Blade: If you not going to eat, I will

Me: Hands off

I didn't eat I just sat there staring at him as he wiped his plate clean then took a sip of his juice.

Blade: That was good.

My mind was calculating trying to figure out what was he up too.

He exhale loudly

Blade: okay fine

He sat back.

Blade: I think we are even you saved my life so I kind of owe you.

Me: Fucking yea you do

Blade: That why I will be putting everything that happened behind us.

Me: Just like that? After all the shit you put me through.

Blade: Don't push it, you tried to kill me first, messed with my business made me seem unfit in front of my damn clients as I couldn't deliver.

Me: What are you talking about?

Blade: Let me jog your memory

He stood up and got a certain file then handed it to me.

Blade: That almost everything you need to know about yourself.

I took the file and opened it; the first picture I saw was of my self-wearing all black with a camera hanging on my neck. He handed me his phone.

Blade: Watch this first

I took the phone and watched, a video of me and Lumka in a certain restaurant, he was proposing but I turned him down.

Me: What so we were never engaged

Blade: He was too good for you

Me: Wow thank you

Blade: You are a trained assassin; you use to kill for a living. You worked for these other two military brothers and you were assigned to kill me but you failed.

Me: I am murder and I was sent to kill you, why the fuck will I choose killing over anything.

Blade: You the only one who can answer that, I don't know much about you as the research we did on you only showed you started existing about four years ago, no history, no family nothing.

I kept paging the file seeing shocking things; he took his phone and pressed it again then handed it to me.

Blade: So after you failed to kill me I think you decided to come back for the second time but this time you messed with my business, got your partner killed

and I haunted you down, lucky I found you but damn you always had a way of slipping right through my hands, watch that. It a video of you fighting my brother the day you got injured.

I watched the video for a multiple of times.

Me: I was with Simi

Blade: Yea and that chick is not your sister, maybe you were training her for assassin I don't know but she doesn't seem like someone with potential to kill.

Me: So this is it, I was played.

Blade: and I believe the only people who would know who you are, are those brothers. Sadly I got a bad history with them

Me: I need to find the brothers; I have to know who I am.

Blade: Doubt they would want to see you; you screwed them, screwed a mission, made me find them at their hiding and got their wives involved.

I could hear him talk but my mind wasn't there, I had to find them and ask what they know about me. Anything useful.

Me: I have to find them, I must find them. You have to help me.

He went quiet just looking at me.

Me: Please they are my only hope in knowing who I am, so I beg you. Maybe I have my own family out there sick worried about me, please.

Blade: okay I will help you; we can go see them tomorrow

I couldn't help the smile that broke off my face.

Me: Now you talking

I said and wink at him, he shake his head clearly amused.

Blade: I feel like you deserve it after the slaughter party you hosted the other night.

For the first time ever since I met this guy, I smiled a genuine smile.

THIRTY SIX

BLADE

I must admit I am very impressed by amour, a fucking badass and I am slowly but surely starting to worship her. She got great killing skills only if she could learn to be patient and being more observant. I have just realised there is nothing more sexier than a woman who can stand her ground, a woman who fucking knows how to take care of herself, a woman who would fight you all the way before you get your way and a woman who knows how to press a trigger without thinking twice. What could a man ask for if he got a woman who got her back? I have always been the kind of person who is in control of his feelings, if you betray me; I make you pay. If you loyal to me; I will be loyal to you. My actions towards you depend on what you do for me. I had planned to break her slowly but surely, I had planned to make sure she's submissive then I knew I could make real cash with you, woman like her are rare breed but here we are today. How can I pimp and sell her when she killed and saved my ass. Yea I a man enough to admit that she fucking saved my ass therefore that make us even. She corrected her wrongs to right so I have nothing against her no more. I have no reason to make her pain, I would actually rather worship her.

Amour: You know the only reason I am not killing you right now is because I need you to figure out who I am.

I chuckled oh yes I know, and that how I had planned to get her to be civil and I knew that was the only way I could make her to be civil.

Me: I will have to disagree

She walked past me and poured herself my whisk without asking, she than sat opposite me. We were in the balcony, watching the sunset like old couples waiting to die together.

Amour: Oh trust me there is nothing I want more than seeing you dead, seeing you straggle to take your last breath.

Me: Lies if you wanted me dead you would've killed me that night.

She took a sip of the whisky, and then made a funny face looking at the glass, wearing my shirt looking like a fucking godness.

Amour: True but I had to make you suffer like you made me suffer; shooting you would've been an easy death for you.

Me: Understandable or you just love my dick game so much that you couldn't afford to see me dead.

She laughed.

Amour: Your dick game is good yes but it just a dick I can get any dick I want anywhere anytime so I won't keep you for your dick.

Amused I looked at her in disbelief, perhaps if god made all women like this I would've long got married.

Amour: So now tell me I am curious; how the fuck did you break free from the chain.

I smiled proudly and raised a glass to her.

Me: I had a key, you used the same chain I used on you and I happen to have a key on my pocket.

I took a sip of my drink as she look at me in complete disbelief.

Amour: Son of a bitch. What happened to the bodies outside?

Me: I burned them to ashes.

Shaking her head sideways she asked the question I never had to answer before.

Amour: Why are you so cold hearted? Who wronged you?

Me: I am not cold hearted; I look out for those who look out for me and so many have wronged me.

Amour: How come you hate women so much?

I looked at her for a while, trying to figure out if I hate her specifically. Then I came to conclusion right there and then, she has to be the second after my sister.

Me: I want to fuck you

She chokes on her drink.

Amour: What the fuck

Me: You have been turning me on all along and I really want to fuck you, no stings attach just fucking.

Amour: What makes you think I want to be fucked by you? I fucking hate you.

Me: Firstly I know you hate me; secondly I am horny, third I sure do feel like we make great fucking partners. Come on now I am sure you also want to release some steam, some tension so by tomorrow you would be ready and fresh. Not getting enough dick makes woman grumpy.

Amour: Go fuck yourself

She gulp down the rest of her drink and placed the glass on the table then stood up to walk away, to get inside she had to pass by me, when she was near I put up my foot and tripped her she fell right on my arms as I catch her.

Me: I just swept you off your feet, are you telling me we not going to fuck

I said putting her on my lap; she looked at me, her eyes locking with mine. I used to hate how she looks at my eyes, it felt like she could read me like an open book yet I also loved staring at her big clear white eyes. She bites her lower lip in a most sexy way.

Still keeping eye contact she lean in till our lips touched, she brushed her lips against mine slowly and gentle god damn my dick stiffen hard and ready to bust through my pants, my hands around her waist tighten as I press her down on me, her perfect ass was right on my dick. Damn woman what are you doing to me, I slowly moved my right hand and slid it other the shirt rubbing and squeezing her exposed thighs. She grinds on me a little and I felt the morn vibrate on my chest. We were still looking at each other, our lips just brushing together. It was an undeniable truth that our bodies connected more than anything else. I could tell that by the way her thong is so wet as I rub her gentle. She bites on her lower lip and closed her eyes as she felt my touch on her pussy then she opened them again, slowly she kissed me and bites my bottom lip gentle. Her hands moved from my neck to my abs. she brushed me gentle clearly loving the feeling, the more I rub her the more she opens her legs wide for me. A morn escaped her mouth and I couldn't help but smile, she smile back and grind on me making me moan back.

Amour: Let fuck

I doubt I have ever been so happy from just hearing those two lousy words.

THIRTY SEVEN

ZINHLE ZUNGU – TEDDY

The feeling you get when you slept so well the previous night in a way that when you wake up in the morning you be smiling to no one but yourself. When you finally feel like you have met your match and everything just fit perfectly, what I know for a fact is I am not a good person myself; I kill in cold blood so look at god pairing me with the same person who also kills in cold blood. Blade is not the type of man you would call boyfriend or husband or even lover and I was definitely not looking for a lover in him, he may be able to fuck me thoroughly and so fucking good but he is far from being a lover, can he even love. I doubt I even want to find out, but it no secret that he fucks so well, more than good. The power of good dick would make one lose their mind I tell you. You may act all holly but you damn know you have done some crazy shit for a good dick, I mean look at me I am busy praising the same dick of the same man who made my life miserable.

I am fucking disgusting. I should be ashamed.

I toss the blanket aside and woke, he is not in bed. Yesterday we even slept together, same bed and fucking same blanket. We had sex in the balcony, the kitchen counter, the kitchen floor then the bedroom where we finally retired and went to sleep. As I brush my teeth I am busy checking myself out, is that a glow. Did he fuck me into glowing? I took a deep sigh.

Me: Girl stop biting yourself up about yesterday, it happened and you enjoyed get over it.

I tried pep talking myself. I finished brushing my teeth and washed my face, today he was taking me to see the brothers and hopefully I will get the answers I want. I was hungry so I walked out of the bedroom in his t-shirt only and barefooted, the girl had to eat people, and she wasn't eating enough for quite some time. While I sip on a juice from the jug I was busy preparing breakfast for myself only, dancing humming a song when he walked in sweating and panting.

Me: You went for a run?

Blade: Yes

Me: And you didn't wake me?

Blade: You were sleeping

Me: Since when did that stop you?

Blade: Today

I rolled my eyes. He walked to the fridge and grabs a bottle of water.

Blade: Couldn't you pour the juice in a glass?

Me: No, got a problem with that?

He chuckled.

Blade: No

He walked away.

Blade: Make enough breakfast for both of us.

Me: I am not your fucking wife.

I shout after him as he disappears into the bedroom. I finished making my breakfast, sat down and ate like there's no tomorrow. Then I washed and cleaned everything I was using, he walked in all clean and fresh smelling heavenly.

Blade: Where is my food?

I ignored him as I walked past him.

Me: I am going to bath so that we would leave.

Blade: I am joining you

Me: No!

Blade: Why you always want me to beg you when you know you want it as much as I do.

Me: I said no

I said and walked away.

I got in the bathroom, took off my clothes and started running the bath, he lifted me up and placed me on the shower than switched on the water. Making me gaps for air.

Me: The fuck you doing, do you know how long it will take to dry my fucking hair?

He ignored me straight up as he made me turn to him, our body locked together giving me the best feeling ever, I never knew naked body could feel this good on me. he looked down on me as he is taller while rubbing my hair with a shampoo, I let out a sigh and just enjoyed him washing my hair, his hands moved slowly from my hair to my boobs, he brushed them so nicely he would squeeze and twist them, making me let out a loud morn. My hand made it way down to his rock hard dick, I started massaging it up and down slowly,

stroking it. He pressed me on him as his hands move to my ass squeezing hard, my hand never left his dick as I stroke it up and down, water dripping on our bodies and our breath escalating. He lifted me up I inserted his dick on my pussy as I wrap my legs around him then my hands on his neck, his dick sink in nice and slowly making me moan and gasp for some air as I bites on my lip. It felt so good as he slide in and out, he moved towards the wall and pressed me on the cold tiles that made me feel so good as I was so hot and burning. He started pounding in me; in and out fast. My nails dig on his back as I scream his name. He would groan on my ear making my whole body to vibrate, boy cum just dripped down my pussy like this shower water I am staring at. He fucked me through my cum as he slowly ejaculated right after me, holding me tight squeezing me to him. Finally we were done with the quickie we both took the shower afterwards without saying anything to each other. My pussy was burning up but boy I felt so good.

The weather wasn't friendly at all today as he drove us to the city; it had clouds and it cold. I had worn sweat pants with his hoodie that was too big for me but it still made me cute or so I think. We haven't said a word to each other ever since the steamy bathroom session, even the car wasn't playing any music and as for me I kept my eyes fixed outside the window.

Blade: Next time stop pretending as if you don't want it.

Me: I didn't want it.

Blade: Yet you came as if there is no tomorrow.

Me: Just because I came it doesn't mean I wanted it.

Blade: Yea right, next time I won't even go after you.

Me: Who said there would be a next time anyway?

He looked at me then back to the road.

Blade: Umm we shall see

Me: Just drive and shut the fuck up!

My mind wasn't here at all. All I could think about is; what would I find when I get there? I am stressed because I don't why I left or ran and I don't know what might happen when we get there but I am hopping for the best.

THIRTY EIGHT

ZINHLE ZUNGU – TEDDY

My poor ass hurt from all the sitting, and I was so damn thirsty. We have been driving for about five hours now. I just want to get there get this done over as soon as possible. I kept exhaling loudly without saying anything.

Blade: Just talk

Me: Who said I want to talk

Blade: Okay

He said and kept quiet.

Me: Okay fine I am thirsty and when are we getting there?

He chuckled and ignored me, nx fucking asshole. He kept on driving not saying anything till we entered another place surrounded by trees in a middle of nowhere exactly like his robben island. But this one looked really like a prison; it had a huge gate, cottages and a very big yard. He drove in and parked the car then turned to me. Why do I feel like I have seen this place before? It just looks and feels so familiar.

Blade: Brace yourself.

He said grabbing a gun, put it on his back then took another one and handed it to me.

Me: Is this necessary?

Blade: Oh trust me, it is.

I sigh rolling my eyes and took the gun put it on the hoodie pocket then got off the car same time as Blade got off too. We walked towards a building that had a door facing on the gate, the place was so quiet, and I kept looking around.

Blade knocks on an open door and just walked in without being told to come in.

“What the fuck now?”

A guy said inside, I took a deep breath before following after Blade. The guy was just sitting down on his office chair when he spots me he got confused. He looked from me to Blade then back to me.

“You brought this asshole here, really Ted? You showing up with this fucking ass after the shit you did”

Blade walked up to him and sat on a chair opposite him, he didn't seem to be bothered by anything. I took a seat beside Blade on another chair.

“I should've fucking known”

Blade: Hi Mabandla it good to see you again?

There were voices outside of two guys who were busy arguing about some gunshots.

“I take the cup for best shot”

“Oh come on now boss there is no need for bragging”

Mabandla: Oh Oh I would run if I were you

He said staring at me, Blade looked at me too. Our eyes locked and for some weird reason we communicated through them eyes as he tell or rather signal that it about to get down, so I put my hands on my pocket and got hold of the gun.

The two guys showed up.

“Yo Mabandla you should have se-“

He stopped on his track, his face turned stormy and actually kind of cold same time, his jaws clench so hard and veins popped on his fore head.

“What the fuck is this”

He directed the question to the guy named Mabandla.

Mabandla: I wish I knew

The other guy walked past him in a split of a second he had me by my neck.

“You fucked us Ted then you have gut of showing up here with this asshole”

Me: I suggest you get your hands off me right at this moment.

Mabandla: Craig

The Craig guy looked at me one more time so angry that even his eyes started foaming tears then he got his hands off me.

Blade: amour don't

I was about to take out my gun when Blade spoke.

“No what the fuck are they doing here”

The angriest scary guy asked, now I wonder what I did to make them this angry.

The angry guy took out his gun and pointed at Blade.

Blade: Can you tell your brother to drop his gun so we would talk like adults or I should get his wife to calm him again.

“Don't fuck with me I could blow your brains right now”

Blade: I would think twice if I were you, considering the fact that I know where you live.

Mabandla: Nkosi

He said calmly, Nkosi cussed before lowering his gun. And now I had them figured out, Nkosi was a ticking bomb while Mabandla was the calm one.

Blade: Thank you

Nkosi: What do you want Zinhle?

He said staring at me, Blade and I looked at each other completely confused by the name.

Nkosi: You fuck up; you run and don't face the consequences then boom you come back now.

I felt my heart pounding as I repeat the name Zinhle over and over in my head.

Me: Hi I have a favour to ask.

Nkosi: You are not going to see my wife Zinhle; I told you if you choose this path you will never be in contact with her again so don't even try me.

Craig: So you not sorry for getting Ride killed, you such a fucking bitch cocksucker

He said to me and walked out; in few minutes I picked up three things. My name is Zinhle; I know Nkosi's wife and I got a guy named Ride killed.

I exhale tiredly, all this is so exhausting.

Me: That the thing I don't know your wife, I don't know you or you or the guy that just walked out.

They looked at each other without saying anything.

Me: Few months ago I had an accident and I suffered amnesia.

Mabandla: You should've died instead.

I gave him a look then took a deep breath to calm myself.

Me: I am here because I want to know who I am.

Mabandla: We can't help you so fuck off.

Blade: No you will help her.

Nkosi: What this got to do with you?

Then a realisation came to his mind as he started laughing mockingly.

Nkosi: Wait you and her are dating.

He chuckled.

Nkosi: We sent you to kill him and you chose to fall in love with him, this is crazy.

Mabandla: I suggest you leave both of you.

Blade: No you will help her, don't forget that I know what you do for a living considering the fact that you both were in military, protecting the country, fighting crime and shit yet here you are today training people to kill other innocent people imagine how the minister of correction would make an example about you. Then me and Ted could just got to your wife ourselves and find everything that we want to know.

He stood up and I just sat there.

Blade: Make a wise decision Nkosi all we want is information about Teddy and for her to meet your wife so I suggest you invite us over for dinner or we could always invite ourselves. You have 24 hours to decide.

Blade and Nkosi had a long staring contest they both seem to want to kill each other so badly. Blade turned to me we shared a brief look before he started to walk off.

Blade: You will find me in the car.

He said walking away, and then I was left with two angry soldiers

Me: I'm sorry for everything even the things I don't remember.

I said then stood up and left them there as they were not saying anything, they were just mad as hell and wanted to split blood.

THIRTY NINE

ZINHLE ZUNGU – TEDDY

On our way back I was just quiet all I could think about is; will they help me? Will I ever find my own family? Do I have a family? Is his wife something to me? What happened to me for me to choose such path in life, who wakes up on one morning and decide she wants to kill for a living? Something might have happened, or maybe I was forced.

Zinhle!

The name popped in my mind again, Zinhle. My name is Zinhle, do I have a surname? I wonder how I used to be like before all this, maybe I was a just a bad person.

I took a deep sigh, Blade kept on driving completely ignoring me. I must say I am happy he defended me because between him and those brothers I fear the brothers the most, I think I understand him better to fear him and right now at this moment a part of me is glad I didn't kill him right away. When I find my family we could go our separate ways, he said it himself that we were even so there would be no need to run around in circles chasing each other.

Blade: Hungry?

Me: No

Blade: Thirsty

Me: No

Blade: Okay

He drove into the garage where he got off and went inside while patrol attendances were loading petrol, I lay back on chair. Is it weird that as much as I hate him I would rather stay with him instead of going back to Lumka at the village, right now I have a choice; a choice to walk away and go back where he took me, go back to where I only know but I just feel like I have nowhere to go even if he were to kick me out I wouldn't know where to go so until I find my own family, where I use to live before my life got fucked I will stay with this asshole. He got back in with an energy drink and peanut. He drove again without saying anything.

Me: It weird how you know everything about me yet I don't know anything about you

Blade: I don't know anything about you Zinhle.

I kept quiet for a while because quite frankly he was sort of correct.

Me: So was I the first girl to sell or it what you do.

Blade: It what I do

Me: You sell girls for a living

Blade: Yes and drugs oh and I have my own clubs

Me: You sure do hate women, don't you?

Blade: No I don't but I hate how they can never stand up for themselves.

Me: What that supposed to mean?

Blade: Nothing

Me: Who is she?

Blade: Who is who?

Me: The woman who broke your heart, who is she?

Blade: No one broke my heart

Me: So you just go around taking women and sell them for what money?

Blade: Yes money, lot of money.

I shake my head sideways.

Me: You disgust me, you know?

Blade: Umm

Me: Don't you have a sister? A mother?

Blade: a sister yes, a mother no

Me: I wish they take your sister one day, fuck her till her brains bust then sell her to some creepy people who would turn her into a sex slave

Blade: They should try

Me: You so evil

Blade: Oh amour I never claimed to be a saint.

Me: You know when I get a place of belonging I am going to kill you.

Blade: No you won't

Me: We shall see

From there we drove back in silence till we arrived at his lake house and by that time it was so dark outside, we both made our way in with no word said, I walked to his room, took off my clothes and got under covers. Don't ask me why I am sleeping in his room; I just can't bring myself to sleep in that cell. I feel like it will bring back memories I would rather forget. I was about to dose off when he got behind me, scoop me into him, held me tight then I fell asleep right there on his comfortable arms.

The next morning when I woke up he wasn't there, I woke and took a quick bath then went to make myself some coffee, the weather was okay now a little

bit sunny, I stood at the balcony sipping on my coffee staring at the lake, I felt his presence behind me before he even talked.

Blade: We invited to have dinner with the Nkosis this afternoon
I placed down the coffee as I turn to him with excitement.

Me: For real

Blade: Yea

I jump up on him and hugged him for dear life.

Me: Oh yes

I kissed him all over his face before settling on his mouth, he held me tight as I wrap my legs around his waist, his hands were squeezing my ass as I kissed him then stopped and looked down at him smiling.

Me: As much as I hate you I can't help but want you to bed me

He smirks a very cute smirk, a very rare smirk

Blade: Now you are talking my language.

He said kissing me hungry and I couldn't help but grind on him as he sit down on a chair in the balcony, he took off his shirt that I was wearing as his hands quickly went for my boobs in the mean time I am trying to get the t-shirt off him so I would feel him body on body. He was sucking on my boobs really nice making me moan, I fumbled with my hands as I try to unbutton his pants and get his dick out. we were both breathing so heavy as we were hurrying to getting each other undress once I had succeeded, he tore my thong apart and helped me sink on his member slowly, closing my eyes as I take him in slowly in and out again once I found my rhythm I started moving fast with him moving too meeting me with every thrust.

Blade: What are you doing to me?

He asked going in slowly and gentle like two lovers making love.

Me: Fucking you

I said taking his face in my hands as I kissed him passionately, then bite on his lip gentle before smiling through the kiss; he smiled back and licked my lips like he is licking ice cream.

I backed my face away.

Me: Aah gross

I said making a disgust face; he just smiled biting on his lip and moving side by side inside me then in and out slowly.

Blade: Fuck ...

He said grabbing on me and then spark ass making me giggle.

Me: Don't do that

He sparks it again while pressing me on him and everything just exploded, as I came on his dick so nicely.

Blade: Wanna have a picnic?

He asked still moving inside me faster this time as he was rushing for his own release.

Me: A ...a picnic

Blade: ...picnic amour

We having a picnic, that all I could think about as he fucked me so hard, so nice.

FORTY

ZINHLE ZUNGU – TEDDY

Picnic!

Right under my favourite tree next to the lake where we used to take breaks after jogging was a set picnic for two. A whole made breakfast with some wine. It wasn't too fancy but was really nice of him and I really liked it.

Me: No chocolate

I said looking at his so called picnic

Blade: The is no chocolate here

Me: No flowers.

He looked around then his eyes settled on tree leaves, he got them and placed them around the set of glasses and plate.

Blade: Done, what else?

Me: Strawberries

Blade: Umm then you might as well go back to the house I will enjoy my made picnic by myself under your favourite tree.

He said settling down wasting no time by pouring himself a glass of wine.

Me: Ah ah this is my tree so I stay

Blade: Suit yourself amour

He said smiling to himself making me smile too, I settled beside him and poured myself a glass then sip on it while relaxing. We ate in a most comfortable silence ever, what I have realised so far is that we are so comfortable with being just quiet around each other. We could even spend a day without saying a word. After eating I lay down with my back and watched the sky from under the tree. He climbed on top of me and looked down on me.

Blade: You good?

I literally laughed my ass off.

Me: Why the change of heart? This is not like you

Blade: Let just say you have earned my respect

Me: oh yea is that so or you are just scared of me

He chuckled.

Blade: Why would I be scared of you?

Me: I think you saw me in action then you realised that I am not the kinda chick to mess with so you got chickened

His hands were balancing him on either side of me as he lay between my legs staring down on me. He laughed his tummy vibrating.

Blade: Oh no amour, don't make a mistake you can be as much of a bad ass as you like but I would never be scared of you.

Me: Then why change your attitude towards me.

Blade: Told you, you earned my respect I now admire you

He said and sealed it with a kiss preventing me from saying anything, the moment he broke the kiss we stare at each other's eyes like we always do, then I laughed so hard.

Me: Don't tell me you have fallen in love with me, look at how cute and soft your eyes are

He just looked at me without saying anything.

Me: You haven't have you?

Blade: Love no but I do feel something for you

Me: Something like what? Are you even capable of feeling?

Blade: I am feeling the same thing you are feeling for me

He said and got off me, leaving me laying there.

Blade: We should get going we have a long drive to the city

I couldn't move just as yet, what am I feeling for him? Is it love? I doubt it love I just love his dick game that all it got nothing to do with love, right?

We walked back to the house, my mind wasn't there though. My mind was busy trying to figure out what is happening between him and I. What are we doing exactly, just fucking? Do I care about him? Hell no I don't, given a chance would I kill? Hell yea without thinking twice. Liar you have been given a chance to kill him but you never did; my subconscious reminded me. But that was different; but you still went on and slept with him. What does that say about the kind of person I am?

Blade: Stop thinking about it or trying to label it.

Me: Label what?

Blade: The thing you feeling for me, don't label it?

Me: I am not feeling anything for you

Blade: Yea right

Me: Why would I feel something for you, I hate you.

Blade: No amour you just hate that you are feeling something for me, the more you deny it the more the feeling will be strong.

Me: Stop flattering yourself, I am not feeling anything

Blade: Okay amour

Me: And you

Blade: And me what?

I rolled my eyes

Me: What are feeling for me?

Blade: Told you, it the same thing you feeling, just I won't label it

Me: I am not feeling anything

Blade: That why you made love to me today at the balcony with your eyes not leaving mine.

Me: I didn't make love to you, you made love to me.

Blade: Yea right amour

Me: mxm

I walked past him towards the house. I won't admit anything that I am not even feeling. My focus should be at meeting the Nkosi's. I wondered what kind of a wife he has, she's probably the biggest bitch of them all or maybe a bad ass bitch or maybe she would just tell me to go to hell for sabotaging her husband's business. I really hope she help me. What if she is my sister? That could be possible too, right? I had bath and got dressed in sweat pants and a vest with sneakers. Blade was somewhere around the house, as I wait on him I poured a glass of whisk I needed it for whatever will go down at the dinner whether good or bad but I needed it. He walked in towards me ready to go.

Blade: Let go

I gulp down the whisk burning my inside at the process making me cough hard.

Me: Do you think what I am wearing is appropriate?

I asked following after him'

Blade: Yes

Me: Are you sure

Blade: Yes, you don't have to worry about fitting in. you perfect the way you are.

Me: I just want to be appropriate.

I said getting in the car.

Blade: She seems like a good person so I doubt she would care what you wearing.

Me: You have met her?

Blade: Only once, she's one of the good ones.

Me: So she's not bitch at all

Blade: I am not sure about that as I said she seems like a good person.

Me: Does she look anything like me; is there possibility of her being my sister?

Blade: I am not sure but she is not sexy like you that I know for sure.

I rolled my eyes then took a deep breath.

Me: I wonder what she would say

Blade: Relax would you, you don't have to impress her or any shit like that

Me: Where is your sister?

He went quiet for a while.

Blade: California

Me: When was the last time you spoke to her?

Blade: Maybe you should shut up

Me: Don't you miss being around your family, you are always around me twenty four seven breathing down my neck. I am sure they miss you.

Blade: If you don't shut up I swear I will make a u-turn and you would never see the world ever again

He said not joking at all as he drives focusing on the road, his hands clenching the steering wheel.

Me: Okay my lips are sealed

Blade: Good

His family seems to be a no go area, fine with me it not like I want him to introduce me and shit like that.

Just like that he drove in silence both lost on our own thought and for the first time ever I was so scared of meeting the Nkosi's. I was more scared of meeting the wife, I kept wondering what she will think about me. If Blade says she is a good person that only means she doesn't kill for a living. She is just a saint, how will I even behave around her. A spoiled trophy wife who stay in the house and raise kids, that is if they even have kids.

FORTY ONE

ZINHLE ZUNGU – TEDDY

We had passed by a liquor store, he bought a bottle of red wine then we continue with driving. My heart was pounding out of my chest as we approach the Nkosi gate; their house is huge in a country side. Why these people seem to like the country side this much. He stopped by the gate and pressed an intercom.

“Yes”

A lady answered

Blade: We here for the dinner

The door slowly opened, Blade drove in their long drive way. It felt like I was in some garden park or heaven itself. The drive way is blooming flowers. Well-trimmed trees and a well-trimmed designed grass. I doubt I have ever seen such beautiful yard in my whole existence.

Me: Wow

Already I feel so intimidated by the yard alone, now I am even scared to meet the wife. He parked the car in front of their huge house, I couldn't help but look around as I got off; is this even their house or it a guest house? Maybe it a bnb and they are renting. How the fuck do they keep their so damn beautiful, I should've dressed up for coming here they seem too fancy.

Blade: Stop worrying just come

He took my sweating hand and walked towards the door. He looked at me before ringing the doorbell; I took one hella deep breath. The door opened by their house maid. I am saying that because she is dressed in maid clothes and she is damn old so she can't be the wife. Wait what is the wife's name? Why didn't I ask, God I am so stupid.

“Hi please come in”

She said opening the door wide for us to come in. Their house is spotless clean, white with a raw interior design then the wall on my right is covered in family pictures. I squeezed Blade's hand for dear life as I try to look at the pictures.

Blade: Please take this for us

He said handing the wine to the maid, she smile politely.

“Come on in and seat over there”

She said pointing at a lounge with grey couches.

I let go of Blade's hand as I looked at the pictures. I see her; the wife, so beautiful with a very beautiful smile she is in a garden working. I moved to another picture of her and her husband in a bout smiling to each other, then a picture of the both of them with three kid, another one was a picture of three adorable kids, then a pregnant her, it her with the husband and four kids then lastly was a picture of pregnant her with the husband and four kids. Three boys and one girl, now I am wondering how many kids does this woman have? I walked further in only to be met by other pictures, why does she seem so familiar like someone I have met before?

"Oh my good it really you"

A voice said behind me, when I turned she was coming down the stairs in a hurry, she attacked me with a most warm hug, she let go of me then started looking at me up down, touching my cheeks checking my hands.

"I was so worried about you Zinhle, where have you been?"

Before I could even answer she is already talking again.

"What happened to your hand?"

She asked inspecting the hand with a plaster as I got hurt during the slaughter party; she didn't wait for me to answer though as she moved to another thing.

"Are you even eating well? Oh Zinhle"

She hugged me again, so tight then she let go and looked at me, her eyes had tears.

"I am so happy to see you"

She said staring right on my eyes, and I felt her, I felt everything. I looked at her face and I just felt like letting them tears out, I felt so comfortable with her and I felt the warmth and care she was showing towards me. She wiped a tear that managed to escape from my eyes.

"It okay now, why you never called"

She hugged me again and this time I held on her so tight, squeezing her to me as I felt the void in my heart.

"What the fuck are you doing here? I said Zinhle not you"

An angry voice said, the wife quickly let go of me as she turn to her angry husband who marching towards Blade who had settled on a couch.

"What going on Nkosi?"

She asked wiping her tears, her eyes turned to where Blade was and just like that it like she never cried.

"Why is this man in my house?"

Nkosi: Leave Blade

Blade: Nkosi I am not here to-

“Please leave my house; you have guts to come here after you threaten my family”

Nkosi: You heard her, leave!

Blade fixed his jacket as he stood up; in a matter of a second the wife snatched a gun from behind her husband and pointed it at Blade.

“What are you doing, I said leave”

Blade: I was just fixing my jacket.

I am standing there so confused as to what going on right now.

“Leave my house before I shoot you”

Without even thinking I got between the gun and Blade.

Me: He is with me

I could see hurt, disappointment and confusion on her face.

“Zinhle”

She said in disbelief.

Me: I don't know who I am and I feel comfortable knowing he is with me

“How could you choose a man who threaten my family over me, over me Zinhle”

Me: You don't understand, a lot has happened please let me explain. I don't even know who are you?

She looked at me confused af!

“Mommie I want ice cream”

A very sweet angelic voice said running down the stairs, she quickly handed the gun to her husband who hid it under his t-shirt.

“No ice cream, go to your room now!”

The girl sulk looking so cute, then her attention turned to me and Blade. She walked up to us.

“Hi I am Princess”

I blink a few times; I don't remember having any encounter with kids before.

Me: Hi Princess I am Teddy

Princess: As in Teddy bear?

Her sweet voice asked. I smile a little.

Me: Yes

She giggled covering her mouth, she looked up to Blade behind me then sort of whispered to me but it was loud enough for everyone to hear.

Princess: Is your friend a robot?

I literally laughed.

Princess: He is not moving.

“Princess that rude, go to your room now”

She started mumbling as she walks off.

CONSEQUENCES –HATING HIM! BREAKING HER!

Princess: Bye Teddy bear

Me: Bye Princess

FORTY TWO

ZINHLE ZUNGU – TEDDY

Nkosi: I suggest we all sit down, he said walking to the couch and taking a seat, his wife settled next to him. Blade and I sat opposite them.

Nkosi: You have five minutes to explain to my wife what happened.

I swallowed hard then cleared my throat.

Me: I really don't remember much about my life before now, apparently I rolled down the stairs and hit my head then when I woke up I was told I am suffering from amnesia. I don't even know my own name; you calling me Zinhle shocked me. I don't even know who I am. If it wasn't for him I wouldn't have known anything about myself.

"Is it true?"

She directed the question to her husband.

Nkosi: Yes is true, the amnesia part.

She looked at me with those sorry eyes, the eyes that showed she cared.

Me: So I am asking if he could stay just through this dinner.

Nkosi: No

"He can stay only if he apologise and promise to never threaten my family again"

We all turned to Blade, who's eyes shifted to me and I tried to beg him with my eyes.

Blade: I am sorry I threaten your family; I got what I wanted therefore I have no bad blood with your family and I don't any reason that could make me want to hurt any of them.

Nkosi huff, you could tell he wasn't buying it and he was actually boiling inside but his wife's presence seems to calm him.

"Okay if he is important to you I can tolerate him but make no mistake, you threaten my family again I kill you with my bare hands"

I wanted to laugh but I held myself, she doesn't look like the type that can kill.

She then turned to me.

"I am Nomasonto, y'all call me Sonto and you are Zinhle this Teddy thing I don't even know where is come from"

She said and laughed.

Sonto: Come let have dinner I got a lot to tell you

She stood up taking my hand.

Me: Before we get to a lot, how many kids do you have?

She laughed.

Sonto: Bukhosibemvelo behave and offer the man a drink, and to answer you I have five kids.

Me: What? You don't even look like someone with kids.

Sonto: Three boys, you know them just that you have forgot them.

She then chuckled.

Sonto: Then there is Princess and my new born she is only two months old.

Me: Wow!

Sonto: I know, bla bla baby making machine. Trust me Zamo tells me all the time.

We walked outside at the back where the table was already set and the air was so fresh smells of beautiful flowers was all over.

Me: You have a very beautiful home.

She took a long sigh as she settled down with me next to her.

Sonto: Thank you, a part of me wished I am the one who is suffering the amnesia.

My eyes popped out, why someone would wish for something like this.

Sonto: A lot happened in our lives that I would rather forget forever, now it a new chapter for you. Mama Betty would be so happy to hear you are back.

Me: Is that my mother?

She took my hand in hers.

Sonto: I am your sister not biological sister, we are friends best friends. We are from kaGwinyikopi, a village that is used to be ruled by King Sengwayo long story short he killed our families, Mama Betty is our new found mother. She is the best thing that ever happened to our lives.

Me: So I don't have a family of my own.

Sonto: You have me, Zamo, Mama Betty and all these kids as your nieces and nephews.

She said with a very beautiful smile and I felt like I belong.

Sonto: I will tell you all that you need to know but right now let eat.

She said as the men walked in, Nkosi had a glass of whisk with him while Blade had nothing. They walked to the table and settled down.

Sonto: Bukhosi

Nkosi: He said he doesn't want it.

Blade: He is lying he didn't offer me a drink.

They stare at each other with murderous looks

Sonto: I should've known

She said giving her husband a disapproving look then poured Blade a wine from the table.

Sonto: What are you doing this coming weekend?

Me: Nothing

Sonto: Good, we will have a family gathering back home. Oh Mama will be so happy Zinhle

Me: Thank you so much Sonto

Sonto: Naa man it nothing I am just so happy you back and please don't disappear ever again.

Me: I promise

She smiled.

Sonto: Let eat so you would meet the kids.

I was devouring her food with a huge smile on my face, I was so happy with her next to me. She was just a sweetheart with a very warm smile. I couldn't wait to meet her kids, Mama Betty and everyone else. And I have no doubt that she is my family because I can felt the connection between us.

FORTY THREE

ZINHLE ZUNGU – TEDDY

The dinner with the Nkosis left me smiling to myself. I was glad Nkosi's wife was kind hearted and very welcoming, I even met the kids. They are so adorable. She briefed me about my parents dying and I am glad the man who killed them is long dead cause God knows I was gonna rip his heart apart. Now I just can't wait to meet the rest of the family.

Blade: Are you going to smile like a fool for the whole damn night.

Me: Don't be a mood spoiler

Blade: You have been smiling since we left their house.

Me: Seeing them was so amazing, Mrs Nkosi is just so amazing and welcoming.

Blade: She doesn't know how to hold a gun

I rolled my eyes.

Me: So what, she did point you with the gun and I saved your ass again for the fucking second time.

He smirks, so fucking adorable.

Blade: Now that was a sexiest shit ever, I even got a boner

I rolled my eyes.

Me: You are always horny, it not attractive

Blade: Knowing you wanted to die for me made me happy everywhere.

Me: She was not gonna shoot me

Blade: Nkosi could've and I don't care if she was gonna do it or not the matter of fact is you protected me.

Me: I should not have protected you.

Blade: Then why did you do it?

I went quiet staring outside as he drove, it so dark outside since we left the Nkosi house really late. He chuckled

Blade: Yea you like me just say it

I kept quiet cause deep down as much as I wanted him dead a huge part of me wanted him alive because he makes me alive, he can stand me. Unlike Lumka who couldn't handle me, who wanted to control me, and he was so damn weak. Blade knew how to handle me without controlling me.

Me: I will be moving out of your house this weekend

It was his turn to keep quiet. After a while of silence he finally spoke.

Blade: Where you gonna stay?

Me: Sonto said I can stay with her sister Zamo

Blade: Okay

Me: Oh and I don't want you to come with me during the weekend

Blade: Umm

Me: I mean it, I found my family now so it better we go our separate ways. And Sonto doesn't like you at all so I don't want you around my family.

He just kept quiet and kept driving; I lay back on the chair and closed my eyes. I was so damn sleepy and we weren't getting to the house as it a long drive.

I tried opening my eyes as my neck hurt so badly, my eyes came in contact with a very bright light. I closed then opened them again. I am sleeping in a car on the damn car seat and the sun is out, so bright, not to mention my painful neck.

Me: Fucking shit

I opened the door and went out, Blade left me in the car last night, he is a fucking asshole, and I should've let Sonto kill him. I stretch myself and made my way inside the house. He was still sleeping as I walk in his bedroom, I changed into my jogging clothes then left him sleeping as I jog through the trees where we use to jog when I was still treated like a prisoner. I jog all the way towards my favourite tree where I sat down and watched the birds, the calm water from the lake. All kind of thought were going through my mind, wondering how my life was when my parents were still alive but mostly I just couldn't wait to go home the coming weekend. As much as I couldn't wait I still thought what will happen to Blade, will he let me go just like that. He is not a good guy that I am aware of but still he makes me feel. I looked at the tree where we have engraved our names and all I could think of is; I was here now I am gone, it time for a new chapter perhaps I could change my life. Have a job, a family and be happy. I lay down on the ground and just watched the sky from under the tree. I slowly opened my eyes when I heard footsteps, he jog towards me where he lay down beside me panting and sweating. He dam did look hot.

His t-shirt was dripped with sweat, and his sweat pants just happened to make his dick print so discernible. Without thinking twice I got on top of him my pussy directly on his dick print, I ran my hands on his chest slowly going up and down while grinding slowly; he kept his eyes closed as I lean on him then kissed him gentle on the lips tasting his sault sweat. His dick literally started moving underneath me. He opened his eyes slowly and stares up at me, I slowly took off the t-shirt I was wearing in a most sexy way, his hand found their way to my boobs as he took off the bra but I quickly hit his hand.

Me: I am in charge

He sighs as he let go of me, slowly teasing him. I stood up taking my clothes off till I was left completely naked, he let out a loud sigh as I got on top of him again. Using my hands I took out his dick, making sure not to lose eye contact. I sank in slowly and started riding him in slow motions, then increased my pace. His hands grab my ass as he met me stroke by stroke going in hard till we both came after that we got dressed and jog back. He was still not talking to me; he hardly said a word even when we got back to the house. I say he wasn't talking to me because whenever I ask something or say something he just doesn't reply to it, even when I walked to him when he was sitting on the balcony he just walked out the moment I settled on the chair.

He spent the whole day outside on the sun cutting some fire woods. I don't even know for what since he hardly uses the fire place. I spent my day watching some car, scooters magazines then later on I cooked for myself only, ate and watched the pots leaving them spotless. He came back sweating, walked past me to freshen up when he returned he went to check for food but found nothing. I just pretended not to even see him as he drink the juice from the jug then he took his car keys from the key holder by the door then walked out shortly a car roar into engine as he drove off.

FORTY FOUR

BLADE

I fucking put my own shit on hold just to help her find her so called family then out of the sudden I am not good enough for her or those stupid people who call themselves her family; fucking bullshit. She sleeps in my house, my bed, eat my food then tell me she doesn't want me around her family. What makes her think she's better than me, because as far as I am concern she is as bad as I am? We both have uncountable dead bodies on this ground; we both have dead people's blood on our hands. She is evil as they come, a devil's advocate yet she thinks she's better than me, she thinks I am not good enough for her family. That pissed me off so fucking much, and all I wanted was just to tie her on my bed and leave her like that so she would never see a day light ever again. I was back in the city and I was planning to stay a little longer to get my shit together.

My phone rang.

Me: Vic

Vic: Bro where the fuck have you been?

Me: Been around man, what up?

Vic: I need girls' man, what you mean what up?

Vic is more like my business partner and friend, maybe.

Me: About that, I don't have any girls to transport.

And he is in joburg running things over there.

Vic: Then get them; I need them as in yesterday

The truth is I am having second thought about trafficking girls, after meeting Nkosi's daughter I started having second thought about all this. She reminded me of my sister when we were growing up, so small, so fragile and sweet. She was all I wanted to protect, even when my mother would show up drunk with a different man to fuck her every night for money I always tried to shield my little sister from that because I wanted better for her.

Me: Look man I will call you back in few

I said and dropped the call as the thought of my childhood came up troubling me again.

My mother was a fucking prostitute, and my step father is the one who pimped her all the damn time. Then he would feed her all kinds of drugs. She didn't even care about us; I had to take care of my sister who was so young and

naïve. I never wanted her to be associated with that life; they my mother and step father made me deliver drugs at the age of five. It never bothered them at all. After one of my mother's clients killed her, my stepfather wanted to prostitute my ten year old sister his own daughter and I was only sixteen that time when I committed my first murder. She was sweet as Nkosi's daughter, had an angelic voice and I loved her more than life itself. After the death of my stepfather I got into business, selling drugs, abducting girls for our boss who was paying my sister's school fees as i had moved her into a boarding school in California. I hardly saw her, but I did call every once in a while. I moved to here in South Africa when I reached twenty, it was just Vic and I coming to Shane who was long working for the boss this side, we would get girls from this side and ship them to Zim. It happened for about two years they murdered our boss back home then I had to make a plan, I took over all his businesses this side and they all became mine, under my fucking name as for my sister I last saw her at her wedding five years ago, she's doing well for herself, married to a good guy, have a son together who is probably seven this year and she's living a good life back in California. I never saw a need to be in her life, play family and have dinner together because quite frankly having no family to have dinner with never bothered me till Amour made me feel like shit for not having family dinners and shit, till she made me feel like I am not good enough for her pathetic family.

If I knew she was gonna act like this I was not even gonna help her find them.

LUMKA

I had made my decision; I know mother would be so mad at me. Probably never talk to me again but I made my decision and I am not going back on my words. I walked in the elders were already there even Lungelo as I have asked him to be part of the meeting.

Mother: You call a meeting then take your sweet time to come.

Me: Sorry mother.

Beside her was my so called wife, a woman I don't even love and I doubt I would even ever love her if I try, next to my wife is Lwandle then three elders and Lungelo right beside me.

Me: I have an announcement to make.

My father passed about a month ago ever since then I took over the chieftaincy as required. They looked at me waiting for the announcement.

Me: I am moving back to the city.

I have been living a life with no direction, letting my mother control everything about my life. I feel like it time I take over. They all act shocked as if they don't know how much I suck at this chief thing.

Mother: What? What about your duties? You can't just neglect them like that I took a deep sigh because doing this is not easy at all.

Me: I am stepping down as the chief; Lungelo would take over till I come back and resume my duties.

Lungelo: What?

Mother: What? This thing is gay, who would want a gay for a king?

Lungelo just rolled his eyes, Lungelo may be gay but you can never tell because his appearances are of a man.

Me: I know this came as a shock, I can't be the king, and I am nothing like my father was. I need time to get used to everything, time to find myself and I have no doubt that Lungelo is the best suitable candidate for this, he got father's qualities and it not like he will be the King forever it just for few months till I got my life on track then I will come back and take over.

Mother: That crazy you are not going anywhere this is your life not his life.

Me: With all due respect mother I have made my decision and as the King I am asking you to obey.

Mother: If I don't, what will you do Lumka?

Me: I will have no choice but to banish you from royalty.

Mother: What did you say Lumka? After everything I have done? I am your mother

Me: And if you keep disturbing me as your King I will banish you and you will never set foot here ever again so please mother sit down and listen to what I have to say.

She was fuming with anger and everyone looked at me with pride, Lungelo for the first time in our lives he looked at me and smiled with pride. I wasn't proud of myself for talking to her like that but god knows she had it coming.

Me: Unfortunately I can't stay married to Nokuzola anymore.

I saw a sigh of relief from her, I knew the first day I met her, the day our parents arranged our wedding I just saw it in her eyes that she doesn't love me, her heart belonged to someone else.

Nokuzola: That okay with me my King as long as you are happy and you find what you looking for on your journey of discovery.

Me: Thank you

Nokuzola: What I want to know though is; will my parents be required to return the cows.

Elder: No they keep everything

She thanks the elder and bow down. One of the elders turned to me.

Elder: You took a wise decision, it good to find yourself first, marry a woman you love then take over. We will support you all the way son. Page | 210

Me: Thank you Baba

Lungelo: I am not sure about taking over but I am happy you are finally taking control of your life brother.

We shake hands with huge smiles on our face.

Me: I have no doubt you will make a great King Brother.

He bow to me.

FORTY FIVE

ZINHLE ZUNGU – TEDDY

Have you ever experienced disappointment, so much disappointment that you not even sure if you are destiny for great things in life. It was raining cat and dogs outside, it Friday Blade is nowhere to be found since he left me three days ago he still hasn't come back and I am supposed to be leaving today. I have no phone no transport; right there and then I realised how doomed my life is actually is. I have been completely depending on a man for everything; a place to stay, food, transport literally everything and I am just nothing without him. I hate that, I hate it so much. he sort of made my life so easier that I didn't even notice he did everything for me, how could I be so stupid and blinded, even though I don't remember my life before this but I am sure as hell that I didn't depend on anyone for anything since I hate begging, I hate having to ask anyone anything. When the realisation of how Blade had been taking care of me hit me hard I stood up from the couch I was sitting on.

I walked to his bedroom where I found a back pack on his wardrobe; I packed some few sweat pants, t-shirt and two of his hoodies with my toiletry bag. Without taking off his t-shirt I wore a sweatpants with his hoodie, I love his hoodies they just smell so like him, so good. I put on my running shoes; from the kitchen I packed some food in case I get hungry along the way. I was gonna prove to myself and him that I don't actually need him for shit. I packed a knife too you just never know what might happen after I was done packing I left not even locking his house in case he decide to come back one day. I wasn't sure how I am going to get to Sonto's house but i will walk from here to the main road which is really far and it not even that busy. I am going to hike anything I find. I took a deep sigh as I looked at the rain.

Me: This is it ...

I left the house and started walking, it was still an early morning and the rain didn't seem like it would stop anytime soon. I walked with my hands on my pocket, making sure I walk as fast as I could so I would get to the main road and probably get to Sonto's house before they decide to leave without me. The road kept getting wide, I wasn't getting to the main road anytime soon so I started jogging by the time I got to the main road I had took off the hoodie and a t-shirt only left in a sport bra, I was panting, wet and sweating if that even

make sense. I bent over putting my hand on my knees catching some breath then from the bag I took out a bottle of water and took a long sip. I tried stopping a truck but it just passed me leaving me pissed as hell.

The girl had no choice but to walk, my feet were killing me big time, I wouldn't stop there I kept walking hoping a car would come. Indeed a van stopped for me, it had two guys inside and I actually didn't care at all.

“Where are you going baby girl”

I wasn't sure of the place I was going exactly but I knew it pretty well.

Me: I am not sure exactly but from the shell garage I will take left

“Oh we going to the city, come we will drop you off at the garage”

Me: Sure

They put me in a centre.

“So what your name?” the one who's not driving asked while the one driving kept giving nasty looks.

Me: Teddy

“Nice, I am Mzi and that my dog Lu”

Me: Okay

Mzi: I like your boobs, they seem nice.

He said as they gave each other looks and laugh.

Lu: Since we giving you a ride what you gonna give us?

Me: Pretty much nothing oh and I love my boobs too, so damn nice.

I said unbothered at all.

Mzi: You seem like a cool chick.

Me: Clarify a cool chick for me

Mzi: Someone who is chilled like you.

Lu: And since we giving you a ride you will have to do something for us.

Me: Something like?

They smirk to each other thinking they got me where they want me.

Lu: Well I always wanted to try a three some

Me: Then try it with your hoe mother

The Mzi guy laughed, Lu decided to stop by the side of the road.

Lu: Bitch what did you say?

Me: It pussy you want?

They didn't respond

Me: Fine get out let fuck right here right now then we can go because I don't have all day.

Mzi: I did say you are cool

An excited Mzi was the one to get off giving me a space to get out too; I got off the car and waited for Lu to come on our side.

Me: So who is first? Or I will have to do you both same time?

Mzi: I say start with me

He said unzipping his pants.

Lu: No you should start with me; I am the one who said we should take her.

Me: I will do you both same time.

They smirk to each other and I am like bloody fools, they started taking their pants off.

Mzi: Take of your clothes sweet

He said taking his dick out and stroking it, disgusting me even more so I did what anyone would've done, I kicked his balls as he screamed I punch Lu on the face, took their head and hit them together. They were so pathetic as they couldn't even fight me

I gave them a few slaps followed by some punches. They cussed at me, I decided today I would teach them a lesson they would never forget, so I took their clothes off and threw them away, since Mzi wasn't driving I tied him on the back of the van naked then made Lu drive naked with a knife pointed at him.

Me: So this is what going to happen, you will drive me to where I am going then you will go your own way after dropping me.

With fear written all over his face, he nods quickly.

I sat back on the chair and took out my food from the bag, he drove as fast as he could by the time we passed the Shell garage it was already getting dark and I just hoped they haven't left me. I kept directing till we reached Sonto's house and it was so damn dark by that time. He dropped me off by the gate.

Me: Bye guys it was nice riding with you

I said smiling and waving at them as Lu drives off as fast as he could, I chuckled to myself; serves them right for wanting to take an advantage of me, they can't even fight for fuck sake, feeling proud of myself I walked up to the gate with my fingers crossed, I so hope they are still here.

FORTY SIX

ZINHLE ZUNGU – TEDDY

It dark outside music is playing softly in the car as Nkosi drives; I am sitting beside a sleeping Princess, shame poor kid she has been singing for hours before sleeps took over. She literally made everyone sing, next to her is his brother whom I am not sure of his name, the triplets look so alike I can't tell them apart and at the back it the other two triplet busy playing games on their phones you would swear they are not even in the car the way they are so quiet, of course at the front we have Mr and Mrs Nkosi with their little additional member, Mrs Nkosi is busy feeding her it doesn't seem like the little one like travelling as she has been restless since we left their house. I am very nervous about what I may found when I get there, home. My heart has been pounding ever since we left Durban, we have been driving for a while now and I am just so anxious. I just wanna get there already and face whatever demons if there are any.

“Sorry Aunt could you please pass me the charger”

One of the triplet said tapping my shoulder, I am an aunt it feels so good to be called aunt. I love these kids they are so well mannered and respectful. I grabbed the charger that was right in front of me and passed it to him.

Me:

Here

“Thank you Aunt”

After that I was left smiling to myself, isn't it cute when someone says please and thank you. Hut off to Mr and Mrs Nkosi they seem to have raised their kids so well. To my surprise they even take care of their little sister so perfectly; so we passed by the garage earlier on and Princess wanted ice cream but the parents refused to get her ice cream, while the others wanted milkshakes but when they realised Princess wasn't getting the ice cream they told their father to return the milkshakes back to the store because they no longer want them, it was a very beautiful sight to witness as Nkosi got angry but didn't shout at all he just looked at his wife defeated but the triplet were not having it even after a very long lecture they just sat there not saying anything all they said was; “If Princess is not getting ice cream then you might as well return the milkshakes” no lie I felt so proud of them as little as they are they earned my respect right there and then so Nkosi had to go back and buy Princess ice

cream, boy was she excited. She even thank her brothers with a huge smile on her face and I just couldn't believe their kids were ganging up on them. I have no doubt these kids would look out for each other even when they are older.

Finally I saw houses with light, it was so late so I couldn't make out our surrounding I only could spot houses with light on, he drove for few minutes before he turned into this other big house with so bright light outside. He got off the car to open the gate then came in and drove inside, I couldn't help but try to look outside and I couldn't see much but provided the light I could see their beautiful yard surrounded by flowers.

Sonto: Finally we here, I am so tired.

She said getting off with her kid; the triplet started getting off one by one. I also got off right after them, looking around I couldn't see much as Nkosi take Princess out, I grabbed my bag and just stood there looking around, don't know for what exactly. The atmosphere has changed, all of the suddenly I feel like there is this huge weight on my shoulders, I even feel so cold. I wrapped my hands around my shoulders and walked towards a tree that was near the house, it had a very nice bench to seat but I didn't sit I stood there with my hands wrapped around me, my heart was beating abnormal. I was so scared yet I didn't know what I was scared of. The cold breeze kept hitting me making me shiver as I listen to my heart beat so loud.

"Hey"

She startled me, making my heart beat even more faster, I could even feel my lower lip trembling with fear.

Sonto: Come on in Zinhle

I swallowed a huge lump on my throat then heaven a sigh.

Me: Okay

I stripped my bag pack around me and walked towards her, she looked at me with so much concern.

Sonto: Are you okay.

I didn't know how to answer that even if I were to say I wasn't okay I still didn't know what I would say is wrong so I chose not to say anything at all. She put her warm arm around my shoulders in a most comforting way.

Sonto: It going to be okay you will see.

She said with her sweetest voice then led me inside the house, on the couch was an older woman, one of the triplet had his head on her lap and they were talking. She pulled his cheek in a so baby way, the triplet complained saying he is not Princess he stood up and walked away. The woman finally turned to me,

not knowing what to do I just stood there and watched her watching me. Slowly a tear rolled down her cheek, Sonto decided to just walk away and left me with the woman whom I assume it the Ma Betty Sonto has been telling me about. She open her arms for me, I literally went crashing on her arms it felt like a wind was blowing me towards her opened arms whereas there was no wind that blew me. The moment I crushed on her hands I felt like letting them all out, tears that I don't even know where they have been. They just gushed out like water fall, she held me so tight my chest felt like it was closing up on me. My cry turned to loud sobs as I let them out, I had to breathe and cry at the same time. She just held me and let me cry on her shoulder while brushing my back if someone were to ask why I am crying I won't answer because I also don't know. I was so hurt though; my heart was so heavy and felt so much pain.

“It okay”

She said so calm and sweetly.

“It okay” She keeps saying as she brushed my back gentle letting me cry, after a while we broke the hug she looked me straight in the eyes as if trying to read my soul, I have never felt so scared under anyone's gaze before. I was scared she could see right through the evil person that I have become. I looked down avoiding eye contact but she brought my face up with her index finger then she wiped my tears off and kissed my face making me feel so much warmth as it rushed through my veins.

“Come let me show you where you gonna sleep, you must be tired”

She took my hand and led me towards a room on our left.

“You will share with Zamo, she snores though so be aware”

She says as she prepares me a space beside a fast asleep girl.

“There you go my baby, get some rest. Okay?”

I nod my head as I couldn't trust my voice to say anything. She hugged me before walking out and closing the door behind her. I let out a huge sigh that I didn't even realise I was holding.

FORTY SEVEN

ZINHLE ZUNGU – TEDDY

I couldn't sleep, I kept tossing and turning. I was so restless I found my thought drifting to Blade, I wondered if he was home yet, if he realised I somehow find a way to leave without him having to take me. Night like these makes me miss him so much, I just wish he could hold me so tight to his strong comfortable arms that always wrap around me like a blanket in a cold night and I would sleep so peaceful on his solid strong chest listening to his heart beat and those soft in and out inhales. I am even sleeping with his t-shirt because I like how it smells of him, does he has to be an asshole though? I hate how he has gotten under my skin, he's all I seem to think about and I doubt I have ever log for someone like I am logging for him right now.

I knew it was morning already when I heard a roaster crow outside, the light started shining bright through the window, the girl beside me is just a fast sleep not even once did she wake up and as for me I didn't sleep a wink I kept wondering what will I find when I wake up, how is Blade, is he missing me like I miss him. I kept thinking of the things we could be doing right now to calm me down, how him and I always on each other's throat yet we are so under each other's skin. Shortly I heard voices and people moving around the house, kids talking some crying. The girl beside me Zamo is her name started moving as she stretches herself then opened her eyes and turned to me.

Zamo: Oh crap when did you guys get here?

She yawns and looked at the window.

Zamo: Fuck! It already morning, I had one hella short sleep ever

Me: We got here last night, you were fast asleep.

Zamo: Thank God Mama didn't wake me up

The door bust open, Princess ran in followed by two of the triplet they all throw themselves on top of the bed giggling and started kissing Zamo. The third triplet ran in shortly after the others he also threw himself on Zamo and hugged her, they laughed.

"Hey Aunt we missed you"

They said still on top of her holding her.

Princess: Did you change your nails again?

"So am I getting the iphone I wanted?"

"I want new sneakers Aunt they only cost about 2k and your sister refused to buy them for me"

Zamo: Ohho my God I need to bath

“Come on Aunt you promised

They were all so adorable as they talk at once.

Princess: I want a Barbie house; the other one is now old.

“I hope you haven’t forgot about my xBox”

Zamo: Okay! Okay guys, once we go back in Durban I will buy you your stuff.

Can you get off me now?

Princess made a yes as she jumps on top of the bed.

Zamo: Guys where is your respect, should I call Gran in? Can’t you see Aunt Zinhle is sleeping?

She asked and they all stop talking even Princess stopped jumping on the bed; slowly they turned to me putting me on a very awkward position as I didn’t know what to say or do.

“Sorry Aunt we didn’t mean to disturb you”

One of the triplet said getting off the bed, the other two followed as if they read his mind.

Me: No it cool guys I don’t mind.

Princess: Morning Aunt Teddy Bear

Me: Morning Princess

Sonto: Ayi ayi guys go brush your teeth breakfast will be ready in few.

“Morning mom”

“Okay Ma”

“Did you sleep well Ma”

Sonto: Morning Langa, Langelihle prepare Princess’s toothpaste, I slept well thank you Letho my boy

She said responding to each and everyone of them as they walk out.

Princess: take me Mommie

She said standing in front of her, she picked her up and kissed her cheek.

Sonto: My Princess.

She giggled as she put both her small hands around Sonto’s shoulder then hugged her and kissed her.

Princess: Morning Ma

They smile sweetly at each other.

Sonto: Go brush your teeth.

Princess: Yes ma’am

She said giggling as her mother put her down then she ran off.

Zamo: Yoo you better deposit money on my account your kids want to leave be bankrupt.

Sonto: Not a cent sis, you spoil them too much, Zinhle I prepared a bath for you

Me: Oh okay thanks

She nods and closed the door behind her as she walk away

Zamo: You so stingy

She mumbled as she wakes up, I also woke up and fixed the bed. Zamo threw a gown at me I thank her and took my staff to go bath, she direct me to the bathroom. This house is so big, I kept hearing more voices talking as I walked to the bathroom, after taking a quick bath I went back to the room and changed into sweat pants with Blade's t-shirt then walked to where the voices were coming from, Sonto, Ma Betty, Nkosi, Zamo, Mabandla, two teenage boys, the triplet and other two ladies I didn't know were there sitting on a very big dining table, filled with breakfast; bacons, eggs, toasted bread, Russians, sliced tomatoes, onions, lattice, juice it was just a lot of food and they all turned to me the moment I walked in.

I cleared my throat.

Me: Morning

Ma Betty: Zinhle nice of you to finally join us, you can take a sit

Me: Thank you

I took an available sit next to a girl around Zamo's age.

Ma Betty: Before we eat, Kids this is your Aunt Zinhle

The kids nods then she turned to me.

Ma Betty: You have probably forgotten half of the people on this table; that is Zee Ntando's wife, next to her it her husband Ntando, their kids Junior and Quinton, and next to you is Naledi Nkosi's sister. I take it you have met the others.

I nod my head; Nkosi and Ntando who is Mabandla were just giving me not so welcoming looks so I chose to ignore their stares as I turn my attention to Ma Betty.

Me: Thank you Ma for the warm welcome.

Ma Betty: Let pray

We held hands and bow our heads.

Ma Betty: Heavenly father we thank you for the meal given to us, please bless this food and the hands that made them. I highly appreciate you bringing back Zinhle she has been the missing puzzle in my heart now that I know she's home and safe I feel so fulfilled, thank you so much for these big headed kids on this table I wouldn't ask for any other kids they are all the best thing that ever happened in my life.

"Gogo we hurry"

One kid said and almost everyone on the table said "Shhhhhhh!"

Ma Betty: Keep on showering us with your blessings, in the name of our father the Holy Spirit and heavenly father...

Everyone: Amen

Junior: Ah Gogo you take so long to finish praying one of these days I would faint on this table.

Everyone laughed as they were busy grabbing different dishes of what they want to eat.

Naledi: I don't feel like eating I would settle with cereal.

Zee: You better not be pregnant

Naledi: Sis Zee

Nkosi: What? Don't start with me Naledi, are you pregnant?

She shyly looked down and shake her head.

Naledi: I am not pregnant Bhuti

Nkosi: For your own good I hope you are telling the truth, you still need to finish your studies get a phd then get married before you fall pregnant.

Everyone just laughed.

Zamo: But what if she is pregnant

Yoo the look Nkosi gave Zamo was so murderous.

Zamo: I said what if I didn't say she is pregnant.

She quickly defended herself. Zee and Sonto are busy having their own conversation while Ntando is busy mugging himself with food, Ma Betty is talking to her grandkids even though everyone seems to be minding their own business their attention are on Nkosi's reaction as he looked at Naledi waiting for her to probably put him at ease.

Naledi: I am not pregnant

She says again and this time in a verge of tears

Sonto: Leave Naledi alone, she said she's not pregnant and even if she was it her business not yours she's old enough.

Nkosi: Old enough my foot, if you pregnant I swear I am go-

Ma Betty: You will do nothing now eat your food and leave my kid.

Ntando laugh.

Ntando: If you are pregnant just prepare yourself so raise a fatherless baby.

As much as he said it as a joke I couldn't help but think there's some truth in his words.

Nkosi: Exactly!

Naledi turned to Ma Betty so she would rescue her from these hungry lions.

Ma Betty: One word from the two of you I swear you won't eat this food.

Nkosi: All I am saying is she better not be pregnant

Naledi ended up taking her bowl of cereal and left the table.

Sonto informed me that she would take me to my old house after breakfast, so we all had a nice chilled breakfast filled with laughter and jokes even Naledi ended up coming back with Sonto's little kid as she was busy playing with her.

FORTY EIGHT

ZINHLE ZUNGU – TEDDY

How tragic is it that someone's heart can be so shattered that they no longer even find beauty in existence? That they'd rather endure the splits second of pain of a bullet wound to release a lifetime of aching in their soul. As I sit butt flat on the dust dirty floor leaning on an old wall that might fall anytime soon I wondered what would it take to put a bullet right through my skull? I can't seem to have peace, deep down I am hurt, there's a huge void no amount of love and kindness Sonto and her family shows can fill. I am in my old house; Sonto walked me here and left me since I needed time to myself. The house is old with cracks, the roof is falling off, there's so much dust inside, the old dishes that used to belong to us are covered in dust, and the old cracked table made of woods is filled with dust. My vision is blurred with tears, I feel so suffocated, my heart is so heavy and my head is pounding all I could hear are screams, cries of a man pleading. My whole body is burning up, I am even sweating and the man doesn't seem to stop crying and pleading, I let out a loud cry as I lay down on the floor with my hands around my ears. If Sonto managed to change her life around what made me fail? Why can't I be like her? Have a big family and a house filled with love and warmth, as I lay there on the dirty floor crying and feeling sorry for myself I understood pretty much well why I might have decided to live the life I had been living, why I chose to kill for a living and why I would rather not be around Nomasonto and her family, She's perfect, has it all a loving husband and a warm home. Ma Betty may call me her baby too but it doesn't feel right, she has Nomasonto not me. I don't belong in that family as much as I love them as much as I feel comfortable around them the truth is they're not mine, I am a lonely wolf I got no one, I am all I got and this is my house. The house that I should've built but didn't. I was feeling so dizzy and sleepy, not to mention my head that is pounding so badly. I wrapped myself into a bowl and just cried.

“Amour! Shit, amour wake up”

I could hear his voice calling out for me but I wasn't sure if I am dreaming or he is here. He picked me up wrapping me around his arms, I slowly opened my eyes, beautiful brown eyes stare down at me.

Blade: Are you okay?

I couldn't talk I just held his gaze, then finally decided to look around we were still in my old cracked dusty house. I might have fallen asleep but what is he doing here. I pushed myself off him as I stand still.

Me: You! What are you doing here?

He stood up dusting his pants.

Me: What are you doing here?

I asked again, my eyes hurt like shit from all the crying that I did and my head was pounding because of headache. He just looked at me without saying anything.

Me: Leave! I told you to stay away from me.

He put his hands on his pocket as he stare down at me; I did what I know best I attacked him hitting his chest as I try to push him out of the house.

Blade: Stop

He said so calmly.

Me: I said fucking leave! Leave!

I hit him pushing him with tears gushing out.

Blade: I said stop

He said again, but I continue to hit him and pushing him out.

Blade: Stop!

He roar and pushed me sending me flaying on the floor I fell on the middle of the house, and the floor open up as I hit it hard sending me down flying I scream as I go all the way down then hit my ass on an hard mental. Blade was quickly inside the whole that just opened up.

Blade: Are you okay?

He reaches out his hand trying to help me up.

Me: Fuck off!

I say as I try to stand still and look at my surrounding, it a tunnel I am not sure what it for.

Me: What the fuck!

It was dusty and dark; Blade took out his phone and switched on a flash light, on this tunnel was a big mental box with a huge lock I tried to crack it open with no luck, Blade held my arm as he take me behind him I was about to fight him off when he took out a gun then I decided against it. He shot the locks, I covered my ears with my hands as the gunshot went off once the lock was shot unlocked I quickly went to open the box, my eyes almost popped out of my socket. I looked from the box then back to Blade, then the box that is filled with so much money.

Me: Holly shit

I said grabbing it, excitement slowly creeping in.

Me: Holly shit I am rich!

I screamed picking and smelling the money already I was thinking I would use this money to rebuild my home; change this old cracked roundval into a big double story house maybe then I will feel at home and at peace. Blade just stood there watching me getting excited over money. My attention turned into

him as I jump into his arm and kissed a day light living out of him, he grabbed me so tightly as he kiss me back fast and hungry.

Me: I missed this

I said after breaking the kiss and catching my breath then I screamed.

Me: Holly motherfucker I am fucking rich!

Blade: That a lot of money

I quickly turned to him like a lion I was ready to attack.

Me: Don't even think you will be getting a cent on this money

He laughed or sort of laughed.

Blade: I don't want your money; I have more than those few r100 of yours

I stare at him searching if he is lying or serious.

Me: Then why are you here Blade?

I asked as I near him, the tunnel is small so there's no much moving around.

Me: You can't stay away from me can you?

I stood right in front of him with my head titled up as I watch him; he looked down on me his eyes locked on mine.

Blade: Yes sweetheart, yes I can't seem to stay away from you.

He got me tongue tied as I wasn't expecting that from him. He lowered his face to mine; we were just few inches from kissing.

Blade: I want you

He grab me at the back bringing me to him.

Blade: I want you so badly

His thump careless my lips, they were so dry and my heart was just beating out of my chest.

Blade: You have two options

He suck in a breath as I lick my dry lips together with his thump, my eyes not leaving his.

Blade: Option one you will willingly marry me.

My eyes popped out as I widen them.

Blade: Or I force you to marry me.

Me: What ...

My voice came out as husky as my throat is so dry, I swallowed some saliva first then asked.

Me: What makes you think I would want to marry you?

He smirks at me making the butterflies on my stomach to fly even more.

Blade: The reason you are pressing your thighs together trying to smooth the itch between them is the reason why you would marry me.

Again I was left speechless as I squeezed my thighs together even more.

Blade: You have five days to prepare for the wedding if your so called family want lobola and whatever shit then tell them to come and get it in my house.

He lean over and pecked my lips.

Blade: Five days amour.

He let go of me and I felt a little dizzy he back off and looked at me.

Blade: Bye amour

He said before climbing up and out of the tunnel leaving me stunned and speechless.

FORTY NINE

ZINHLE ZUNGU - TEDDY

I had stayed by my house after Blade left me, I made sure my money is safe and secured before handing back to Sonto's house and by that time the sun had already set, I was dirty and sweaty from trying to close the tunnel so my money would be secured. When I walked in the gate everyone was sitting outside under a tree, talking and laughing and the kids were playing around the yard. They looked up at me as I walk towards them.

Sonto: Oh thank God I wanted to check on you so badly but they stopped me, are you okay?

Me: Yea I am okay.

Is it weird that i feel like Sonto and her family are just too perfect for me?

Naledi: You can sit here sis Zinhle

She said getting off the chair, I have made my conclusion Naledi is the sweetest.

Me: No, no don't bother I need to take a shower

Ma Betty: Go shower I will make you something to eat.

I was about to walk away but stopped on my tracks and turned to them.

Me: I am getting married in five days

I announce and everyone was shocked for a moment then Zamo started ululating and dancing, while Nkosi and Mabandla gave me bored looks.

Mabandla: To whom?

Zamo: We are having a wedding.

Sonto: Oh my God Zinhle that so great

She said with a huge smile on her face.

Me: Blade

Nkosi: You got to be kidding me

Sonto's smile disappeared same time.

Zee: You mean Blade as in Blade the man who threatens our family.

I literally rolled my eyes.

Sonto: You can't marry that man, Zinhle he threatens our family and I don't deal well with people who threaten my family.

Me: You can't tell me who to marry and not marry.

There were some "Woah" from the others, but honestly who does Sonto think she is telling me who to marry and not marry.

Sonto: Zinhle he's not good for you, he's just a thug and you shouldn't associate yourself with such people. I don't want him anywhere near my family.

Me: With all due respect Sonto your man is not a saint either. She scoffs

Sonto: I don't like him Zinhle, he's dangerous and for your information I never claimed Bukhosi to be a saint.

I was getting so fed up with Miss or Mrs too perfect.

Me: Oh suck it up; I don't want you to like him I can do that all by myself.

I said and walked away, I am tired, sweaty not to mention hungry so I don't have energy to beg her to like my husband to be.

Sonto: Well then just so you know I won't be part of that wedding in fact once you are married to him never set your foot in my house with your thug husband.

I turned and walked back towards them.

Me: Then fine I won't be part of your little perfect family; I don't even want to be part of this family anyway.

Sonto: Then why don't you pack your rags and leave my house.

Ma Betty: Sonto!

Sonto: No Ma screw Zinhle she's busy wanting us to sympathise with her yet she's sleeping with the enemy. Look around you Zinhle we are family, we got each other's back and if you can't have our backs then screw you!

Me: Screw you back Mrs too perfect

Sonto: You are so pathetic and naïve if you think he loves you, look at you Zinhle you have nothing you are even wearing his clothes, instead of trying to fix your life and stand on your two feet you busy running after a man that would use you and spit you out like a sugarless gum. Wake up and smell the coffee fix your life; I won't always be around to pick you up.

Me: Pick me up! You never pic-

Sonto: I never what? When your father was burned into ashes, I was there holding you helping you to not get killed along him even your mother died right on my hands and I even had to use my last cent to cleanse myself because you and your family couldn't do it, when you lost everyone I was there helping you get your life back on track then what did you do, you ran off only coming now because you need my help, because you need me to pick you up again, then the stupid kind Sonto helped you, picked you up again only for you to spit it right on my face and stab my back by sleeping with the enemy not only you slept with him you are marrying him and God I know he will toss you out like a used gum and when that day comes don't run to Sonto girl because this Sonto is done, I am so done with you.

Her words hit home and they kept ringing on my head.

Sonto: Go ahead and marry him but mark my words I am done.

I am not good with words as much as I felt like I got a lot to dish I just couldn't find the right words so instead of saying anything I nod my head and back away.

Me: I will be packing my rags and leaving your house.

I roam my eyes around everyone and they were all just sitting there looking at us. I walked off towards the house from the room I was sharing with Zamo I took my back pack and packed my clothes then walked out again. They were talking but the moment I walked out they stopped talking and just looked at me.

Ma Betty: Zinhle wait do not leave

I looked at Sonto but she looked away avoiding eye contact.

Me: No Ma I am leaving thank you for your hospitality

I strapped my bag nicely on my back.

Me: I assure you Nomasonto I would rather be eaten by wild animals than having you "Picking me up ever again"

Looking at Mabandla and Nkosi they were really enjoying this, these men have wanted me out from day one and I assume they are happy to finally get rid of me without lifting a finger, looking back at Sonto who was still avoiding eye contact.

Me: Goodbye Nomasonto

I said and walked away not even looking back.

As I walk back to my house I tried by all means to block the pain that I was feeling deep down my heart, I tried by all means to stop the tears that were burning my eyes from falling. My heart was so heavy it clearly Sonto has been my pillow of strength all my life, having her remind me how she has been there, picking me up as she calls it just makes me wonder if marrying Blade is a good idea, is it worth losing the people who has been there all my life. Maybe I should reconsider and apologise to Sonto; argh screw Mrs too perfect why does she want to control my life and it not like I asked her to be there for me, to pick me up maybe she should've just let me be if I died I would've died, it no big deal. She's acting like I owe her something, I just feel like she thinks because she has been there all my life she now expect me to fucking worship her. Screw that I don't bow to no one, I don't fucking need her. I got myself!

I kept trying to convince myself as I step inside my dark dusty and smelly house. I am going through a mixture of feelings, anger, hurt, sadness and little hope for the future. I laid Blade's sweater on the floor then lay on it facing the

roof, I could spot the sky from the inside, the moon was still half and as it was late the stars were on display. My tummy made those hungry sound, I am used to hunger so it doesn't bother me that much, and I believe I can survive the night then tomorrow I will make a plan and I prove to Sonto and her perfect family that I don't fucking need them.

EPILOGUE

We lose things all the time; money, books, friends and love. But losing yourself is a loss of different kind. Losing yourself hurt more than anything you can ever experience yet some have been fucked by this world in a way that they would like to forget it all and just move on with their life yet forgetting everything hurt on another level, you just never know who you are, forced to start your life all over and accept all bullshit you are being fed. Losing your memory and forgetting everything means losing yourself, no matter how much you crack your skull trying to remember who you are but it just never happen, i am at a point in my life where I have just chose to start over my life with Blade, this is a new chapter for me. It all about new beginnings and I'm hoping for my happily ever after.

“Are you ready?”

I gave her a genuine polite smile as I turned to her.

Me: I was long ready

Stacy smile back as she walked further in the room.

Stacy: I don't know how to thank you for making him human again.

Me: Oh trust me I feel human because of him so in some strange way we deserve each other as we are both lost sheep.

Her eyes were glassy as she looked at me.

Stacy: You so beautiful, Blade picked well and I am hoping now that he has a wife he won't shut me out of his life.

Blade's sister is just a sweetheart, nothing like Blade not even close to being like him.

Stacy: I don't know what you have been through or what makes you think you are a lost sheep but I just want you to know that everything happen for a reason this is your new beginning, cherish it, enjoy it and be happy.

Me: Oh come on let just go get me married save the speech for later.

I say walking towards her.

Stacy: I heard your family won't be part of the wedding and they don't approve of Blade, it was so brave of you to choose him over them and I hope he spends the rest of his life showing gratitude.

She took my hand in her hands.

Stacy: Thank you so much

I am dressed in a white simple dress that is long around my ankles and I am bare footed, the wedding is to take place at Blade's lake house, everything has been set and the altar is right under my favourite tree next to the lake where we have made love even though I haven't seen the deco I just know it a bomb.

Me: Can we go before your brother decides not to marry me.

She laughed wiping off her tears.

Stacy: He's so in love I doubt he can even think straight.

He never said he loves me so I doubt he's in love he just wants me all to himself even though I can never deny the fact that I have fallen in love with him. She took my hand and we walk out of the house, opening the door I was greeted by them, they came. I stood there so shocked to move, they are all dressed up and looking so damn amazing.

Me: You came

Is all I could utter, Ma Betty rushed to me and gave me a bone crushing hug.

Ma Betty: You look so beautiful my baby

Zamo: You are not even wearing a makeup, gosh look at your hair are you seriously getting married with a bun

I touched my hair and my face and honestly I don't see anything wrong with my natural look.

Zamo: Not on my watch, we going back to the house I need to fix you, yoo I have never seen such an ugly bride and that dress where the fuck did you get that it way too simple. Oh my god Zinhle!

Stacy: I will go tell Blade you still fixing yourself.

She said and winks at me then walked away. Sonto just stood the watching me watching her.

Zamo: What size are you? I will need to call Lihle to buy you a dress; a wedding dress.

Me: But I look okay Zamo come on

Zamo: Exactly, you look okay I want you to look stunning.

She walked up to me and started looking at the size of the dress I am wearing; she took her measurements then walked away making a call.

Me: Is she kidding I have to get married in few minutes.

Naledi: I love afternoon weddings they are so romantic

Me: Afternoon wedding!

Zamo: yes I can never let you get married looking like that not on my watch.

She went back to the car and came back with her bag then walked inside.

Zamo: I will find a room to prepare for your makeup and dress up.

Me: Wow!

I looked at her walked inside, Ma Betty just laughed it off.

Ma Betty: We will be inside, is that okay.

I nod my head; She walked in followed by Naledi and Zee.

Nkosi: We will just walk around.

Before they could walk away Zamo showed up at the door and called out for them

Zamo: Bhuti Bukhosi and Ntando could you please drive to town to get the dress from Lihle, please.

Ntando: What? We came to a wedding not to plan a wedding

Zamo: Please, please Sonto please talk to them.

She cleared her throat before turning to her husband and Mabandla with just one look from her they caved

Nkosi: Fine

Zamo: Please drive fast

They groan as they make their way towards the car.

Zamo: Yes!

She said then got inside the house leaving me with Sonto, no one said anything for a while.

Me: Here to pick me up?

Sonto: Zinhle I am sorry, that was low of me I have been meaning to apologise for so long. Look I won't stand here before you and claim I am okay with this but I realised this is your life and I have no right or whatsoever to tell you how to live it, I am here to support you and to show you love because I really do love you.

I just look at her without saying anything.

Sonto: I am sorry Zinhle if he makes you happy then do you, do what makes you happy.

Me: He won't do any harm to your family, I give you my word

She nods her head understanding.

Me: I love him

I admit to her, for the first time I admit to loving him because I really do love him.

Sonto: I can tell and I am glad you found love; I just hope he will treat you good

Me: you are forgiven Sonto; I am not in a position to hold grudges especially against you. You have been too good to me.

A tear escape her eye but she quickly wiped it.

Sonto: Thank you, thank you so much

She walked towards me and hugged me.

Sonto: Zamo was right though you look like an ugly bride.

We laughed it off.

Me: Yea right now I have to get married by night because of Zamo.

She laughed as we walk inside the house. I am not sure about forgiving her entirely but I am glad they decided to come it kind of filled the void in my heart.

I turned out so beautiful, Zamo did my hair and made me wore a weave, she did my makeup simple but absolutely beautiful, my wedding dress was a long maimed and I had no shoes on because I wanted to be barefooted, the catering was already busy with preparing food and it smelled divine. It an afternoon wedding, the sun is slowly setting but it still so damn hot it summer after all, we all made our way to the cars, Blade was waiting for me by my favourite tree I just couldn't wait to see him as I haven't see him all day today. Nkosi drove us there since it was quite a distance. As we approached I was shock out of my words they had decorated the trees with charismas light, the colour is white and red, the tree is decorated nicely with light and some shining stuff. Stacy, her husband and son are sitting on the front raw. Sonto kiss my cheek as we got off the car then walked towards the chairs sitting behind Stacy and her family, the others also joined in. Ma Betty was to walk me down the aisle that was covered in red carpet, after taking Ma Betty's hand I took a very deep breath then a polite song played as we walk, my eyes landed on the lake, peaceful lake that has birds flying it covered with red, pink, white, purple roses so magnificent. I was so happy everything looked out of this world and there he was on his black tuxedo looking like a goddess, he wasn't even smiling his eyes were just fixed on me; those beautiful eyes that always captured and lock me on them, the same eyes that fascinate me so much. When we got in front of him Ma Betty kissed my hand then handed me to him and walked back to sit down. I blocked everything and everyone as he took my hand in his, our eyes locked on each other. My insides were literally turning and I was bursting with so much joy. My arrogant so unromantic handsome bastard with beautiful eyes held my back and brought me towards him, mind you the pastor hasn't said he may kiss the bride but he smashed his sweet soft lips on mine, kissing me out of my breath.

Zamo: Woa!

They started ululating.

Pastor: Well seems like someone can't even wait.

I know Blade is probably saying "fuck the wait" on his mind. He kissed me hard then softly then he broke the kiss and held my face with his both hands making me look at him right in the eyes.

Blade: You are one hell of a woman

He kissed my forehead and I couldn't help but smile at him.

Blade: I love you

My eyes almost popped out, he said it. He fucking said it. Before I could respond to that a car engine startled me, he pecked my lips before we both turned to look who it might be; a driver held open the door then long leg with

long ass heel step out first shocked by who might it be, she came out all dressed in red, long red heels with a very beautiful umbrella red dress, she has a very beautiful red boutique of flowers on her hand. After she stepped out the driver closed the door and stood by the door, like a model in a runway she walked towards the alter and everyone was just staring at this gorgeous woman, who am I kidding my jaws were dropped down, I couldn't believe my own eyes fuck I thought I will never see her again. She stood in front of Blade and I, still with the flowers on her hands holding them tight in front of her and smiling so beautifully.

Me: Simi!

Simi: I didn't get the invites; I bet it got lost in the mail.

She said still maintaining her beautiful smile.

Me: Where have you been Simi?

I asked still chocked I am seeing her, it been long.

Simi: Well been around, living in your mansion.

Me: My mansion?

Simi: I take it you still haven't recovered your memory, well your beach house.

I love it there so much peace.

I have a beach house, a whole mansion.

Simi: Traitor

Me: Huh

Simi: You are a fucking traitor Teddy

Before I could say anything she dropped the flowers revealing a gun, I gasped with my eyebrows brought together in confusion and a big frown, Blade was quickly to shift me behind him.

Simi: Just the person I want, hello motherfucker!

Me: Blade move, Simi what ar-

I didn't get to finish my sentence as the gunshot went off and everyone started screaming, not once not twice but four times the forth bullet went through Blade hitting me on my stomach then blood gushed out, Blade fall on the ground groaning and the fifth gun shot went to my neck. I moved my hand from my stomach to my neck trying to stop the bleeding. My eyes met with hers, shocked crossed through her face, her lips started trembling as she backed away running off. My eyes shift to a bleeding to death Blade, I was also bleeding so much, and I collapsed on top of him. Stacy was grabbing him, crying and shouting for him to wake up. A car engine sounded as it drove off.

Stacy: Blade! Please wake up please! You can't leave me, you can't yo-

Me: N... no ... n

As I try talk more blood would gush out even on my mouth and I just knew it was over there's no turning back, tears were just pouring out. He wasn't moving not even a little, my vision was slowly becoming blur. I could hear someone calling out my name from afar but I couldn't make out anything. My blooded hand grabs his cold hand, slowly but surely my eyes closed and then everything just stopped. The world stood still I couldn't hear a thing, my head went dizzy then it was light out. All I could think about before passing out was is he dead? I wish I had told him I love him. I wish he knows I love him so much.

Teddy was here!

Blade was here!

THE END

Side note

Sending love and light! Thank you for your time, highly appreciated. Feel free to text me in case of any feedback on how I can improve my writing!!